



ΕΤΑΙΡΕΙΑ ΓΡΑΜΜΑΤΙΚΗΣ

ΑΓΓΛΙΚΗΣ ΓΛΩΣΣΗΣ

BY WILLIAM SMITH

WILLIAM SMITH

ΕΡΓΑΣΤΗΡΙ ΙΣΤΟΡΙΑΣ
ΝΕΟΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗΣ
ΕΚΠΑΙΔΕΥΣΗΣ

ΒΙΒΛΙΟΘΗΚΗ
ΑΛΕΞΗ ΔΗΜΑΡΑ

(151)

ΣΤΟΙΧΕΙΑ ΓΡΑΜΜΑΤΙΚΗΣ ΤΗΣ ΑΓΓΛΙΚΗΣ ΓΛΩΣΣΗΣ

Δόξα
χαρι

ΚΑΤΑ ΔΙΔΑΣΚΑΛΙΑΝ ΤΟΥ ΚΑΘΗΓΗΤΟΥ ΑΓΓΛΙΚΗΣ
κ. WILLIAM CRIGHTON

ΕΚΔΟΣΙΣ ΔΕΥΤΕΡΑ

ΕΚΔΟΣΙΣ
ΕΚΠΑΙΔΕΥΤΙΚΟΥ ΠΕΡΙΟΔΙΚΟΥ
"THE
ENGLISH COMPANION,"
ΝΙΚΗΣ 23^B - ΑΘΗΝΑΙ

ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ

ΤΟ ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΟ ΚΑΠΙΤΑΛ

ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ

ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ
ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ

ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ

ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ
ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ
ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ
ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ
ΕΛΛΗΝΙΚΗ ΔΗΜΟΚΡΑΤΙΑ

ΠΡΟΛΟΓΟΣ

Στὸν Πρόλογο τοῦ ἐκδοθέντος πρὸ τριετίας καὶ πλέον ἔργου μας, «**Στοιχεῖα Γραμματικῆς τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς Γλώσσης**» ἐξηγήσαμε μὲ λίγα λόγια γιατί ἡ Ἀγγλικὴ Γραμματικὴ δὲν εἶναι τόσον ἀπλῆ, ὅσον πιστεύεται ἀπὸ πολλοὺς. Ἀπὸ τότε μᾶς δόθηκε πολλὲς φορὲς ἡ εὐκαιρία νὰ διαπιστώσωμεν πὼς τῇ γνώμῃ αὐτῇ ἐξακολουθεῖ νὰ τὴν ἔχῃ, ὄχι μόνον ἓνα σημαντικὸ ποσοστὸ ἀπὸ τοὺς σπουδαστὰς τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης, ἀλλ' ἀκόμα καὶ ἀρκετοὶ ἀπὸ τοὺς διδάσκοντας αὐτὴν. Μᾶς δόθηκεν ἡ εὐκαιρία νὰ διαπιστώσωμεν ἐπίσης πὼς ὁ κυριώτερος λόγος ποὺ συντελεῖ, ὥστε ὁ σπουδαστὴς νὰ συναντᾷ σχεδὸν ἀνυπερβλητὰς δυσκολίες στὴν προσπάθειά του γιὰ τὴν κατανόησιν τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς Γραμματικῆς εἶναι ἡ ἄγνοια τῆς Γραμματικῆς τῆς μητρικῆς του Γλώσσης. Εἶναι δὲ ἐκτὸς πάσης ἀμφισβητήσεως πὼς ἀπαραίτητος προϋπόθεσις γιὰ τὴν ἐκμάθησιν τῆς Γραμματικῆς τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς Γλώσσης, ἡ ὁποιασδήποτε ἄλλης ξένης Γλώσσης, εἶναι ἡ καλὴ γνώσις τῆς Γραμματικῆς τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς Γλώσσης. Διότι, ἂν ὁ σπουδαστὴς δὲν εἶναι σὲ θέσιν νὰ κἀνὴ διάκρισιν π.χ. μεταξὺ «Ἀντωνυμίας» καὶ «Ἐπιθέτου», μεταξὺ «Χρόνου τοῦ Ρήματος» καὶ «Ἐγκλίσεως», μεταξὺ «Προθέσεως» καὶ «Ἐπιρρήματος», κλπ. τότε, κατὰ τὴν γνώμην μας, αἱ προσπάθειές του γιὰ τὴν τελείαν ἐκμάθησιν τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς Γλώσσης ἀποβαίνουν μάταιοι. Γι' αὐτὸ βλέπομεν, πὼς ἐπὶ 100 σπουδαστῶν, οἱ ὁποῖοι ἀρχίζουν τὴν ἐκμάθησιν τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς Γλώσσης, μόλις ἓνα ποσοστὸν 15-20% κατορθώνει νὰ φθάσῃ στὸ τέρας. Ἀπὸ τῇ μεγάλῃ μάζᾳ τῶν 80-85% ἓνα μεγάλο ποσοστὸν, ὕστερα ἀπὸ μερικοὺς μῆνας, ἐγκαταλείπει τὴν προσπάθειά του, ἐνῶ ἓνα ἄλλο μικρότερον ποσοστὸν ἀγωνίζεται, προχωρῶντας μὲ βῆμα σημειωτό, γιὰ νὰ μὴ φθάσῃ τελικὰ στὸ τέρας.

Ἐπανεκδίδοντες τὴν πρὸ πολλοῦ ἐξαντληθεῖσαν πρώτην ἔκδοσιν τῆς Γραμματικῆς τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς Γλώσσης, προσπαθήσαμεν, ὅπως ἀποποιήσωμεν ἀκόμη περισσότερον τὰ διάφορα βασικὰ κεφάλαια αὐτῆς,

ὥστε νὰ εἶναι πλέον εὐχερὴς ἢ πλήρης κατανόησις των. Ἐπὶ πλέον μεταξὺ τῶν βελτιώσεων τῆς νέας ἐκδόσεως συμπεριλάβαμε καὶ τὴν προσθήκη, στὸ τέλος κάθε κεφαλαίου, εἰδικοῦ παραορητήματος ἐξ ἐκτοντάδων γραμματικῶν ἀσκήσεων.

Παραδίδοντες στὰ χέρια τῶν σπουδαστῶν τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης τὴν παροῦσαν ἐκδοσιν, θέλομεν νὰ πιστεῦωμεν, πὼς τοὺς ἐφοδιάζομεν μὲ ἓνα βασικὸ καὶ πολυτιμώτατο βοήθημα τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης.

Ἀθῆναι—Μάρτιος 1956

THE PARTS OF SPEECH

(ΤΑ ΜΕΡΗ ΤΟΥ ΛΟΓΟΥ)

Αἱ Ἀγγλικῆς λέξεις κατανέμονται σὲ ὀκτὼ ὁμάδες αἱ ὁποῖες λέγονται «*The Parts of Speech*» (Τὰ Μέρη τοῦ Λόγου) καὶ εἶναι αἱ ἑξῆς :

1. *Noun*. (Οὐσιαστικό).
2. *Adjective*. (Ἐπίθετο).
3. *Pronoun*. (Ἀντωνυμία).
4. *Verb*. (Ρῆμα).
5. *Adverb*. (Ἐπίρρημα).
6. *Preposition*. (Πρόθεσις).
7. *Conjunction*. (Σύνδεσμος).
8. *Interjection*. (Ἐπιφώνημα).

Τὸ πλεῖστον τῶν Ἀγγλικῶν λέξεων ἀνήκει σὲ ἓνα ἀπὸ τὰ ἀνωτέρω ὀκτὼ **Μέρη τοῦ λόγου**. Ὑπάρχουν ὅμως ἀρκετὲς λέξεις τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης ποὺ χρησιμοποιοῦνται στὸν προφορικὸ καὶ γραπτὸ λόγο, ἄλλοτε ὡς ἓνα μέρος τοῦ λόγου, καὶ ἄλλοτε ὡς ἄλλο. Θ' ἀναφέρωμεν ἐδῶ δύο παραδείγματα.

Α. Ἡ λέξις *after* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἄλλοτε ὡς *preposition* (Πρόθεσις), ἄλλοτε ὡς *adverb* (Ἐπίρρημα), καὶ ἄλλοτε ὡς *conjunction* (Σύνδεσμος). Ἔτσι : α) Στὸ παράδειγμα : *After* school, the boys played football. (Ὑστερα ἀπὸ τὸ Σχολεῖο τὰ ἀγόρια ἔπαιξαν φούτμπόλλ), ἡ λέξις *after* ἔχει θέσιν **προθέσεως** (Preposition), **ἐνῶ** :

β) Στὸ παράδειγμα : He fell ill **on** Monday and died three days *after*. (Ἐπεσεν ἄρρωστος τῇ Δευτέρᾳ καὶ πέθανε ὕστερα ἀπὸ τρεῖς μέρες), ἡ αὐτὴ λέξις *after* ἔχει θέσιν **ἐπιρρήματος** (Adverb), καὶ

γ) Στὸ παράδειγμα : *After* her husband died, she had to earn

her own living. (Μετὰ τὸν θάνατον τοῦ ἀνδρὸς τῆς ἀναγκάστηκε νὰ κερδίῃ τὴ ζωὴ τῆς μόνη τῆς), ἡ αὐτὴ λέξις *after* ἔχει θέσιν *συνδέσμου* (Conjunction).

Β. Ἡ λέξις *round* χρησιμοποιεῖται στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα ἄλλοτε ὡς *adjective* (Ἐπίθετο), ἄλλοτε ὡς *noun* (Οὐσιαστικὸν), ἄλλοτε ὡς *verb* (Ρῆμα), ἄλλοτε ὡς *adverb* (Ἐπίρρημα), καὶ τέλος ἄλλοτε ὡς *preposition* (Πρόθεσις).

Ἔτσι: α) Στὸ παράδειγμα: There is a *round* table in the middle of the room. (Ὑπάρχει ἓνα στρογγυλὸ τραπέζι στὸ μέσον τοῦ δωματίου), ἡ λέξις *round* ἔχει θέσιν *ἐπιθέτου* (Adjective). β) Στὸ παράδειγμα: The earth's yearly *round*. (Ἡ ἔτησίᾳ περιφορὰ τῆς Γῆς), ἡ αὐτὴ λέξις *round* ἔχει θέσιν *οὐσιαστικοῦ* (Noun). γ) Στὸ παράδειγμα: The car *rounded* the corner at 40 miles an hour. (Τὸ αὐτοκίνητο πῆρε τὴ στροφὴν μὲ 40 μίλια τὴν ὥρα), ἡ λέξις *round* ἔχει θέσιν *ρῆματος* (Verb), δ) Στὸ παράδειγμα: Don't look *round*. (Μὴ κυττᾶτε γύρω), ἡ αὐτὴ λέξις *round* ἔχει θέσιν *ἐπίρρηματος* (Adverb), καὶ ε) Στὸ παράδειγμα: My daughter has a necklace *round* her neck. (Ἡ κόρη μου ἔχει ἓνα κολλιὲ γύρω στὸ λαιμὸ τῆς) ἡ αὐτὴ λέξις *round* ἔχει θέσιν *προθέσεως* (Preposition).

Πότε ὅμως μία καὶ ἡ αὐτὴ λέξις θεωρεῖται, ὅτι ἀνήκει σὲ ἓνα μέρος τοῦ Λόγου καὶ πότε σὲ ἄλλο, θὰ τὸ ἰδοῦμε κατὰ τὴν ἀνάπτυξιν τοῦ σχετικοῦ μὲ κάθε μέρος τοῦ Λόγου κεφαλαίου.

Πάντως ἀπὸ τὰ ἀνωτέρω δύο παραδείγματα γίνεται φανερὸν πόσον ἀπαραίτητος γιὰ τὸν σπουδαστὴ τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης εἶναι ἡ τελεία γνῶσις τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς Γραμματικῆς.

Διότι τότε μόνον θὰ εἶναι σὲ θέσιν νὰ χρησιμοποιῇ στὸν γραπτὸν ἢ τὸν προφορικὸν Λόγον τὴν κατάλληλὴν λέξιν στὴν κατάλληλὴν θέσιν: «*The right word in the right place*».

ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΝ ΠΡΩΤΟΝ

THE ARTICLES — ΤΑ ΑΡΘΡΑ

Τὰ ἄρθρα τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης εἶναι δύο: α) τὸ *Definite Article* (Ὁριστικὸν ἄρθρον) καὶ
β) τὸ *Indefinite Article* (Ἀόριστον ἄρθρον).

I. DEFINITE ARTICLE

Α. Ἐνῶ, ὡς γνωστόν, στὴν Ἑλληνικὴ γλῶσσα τὸ ὀριστικὸν ἄρθρον ἔχει ξεχωριστὸ τύπο γιὰ κάθε γένος (ὁ, ἡ, τὸ) καὶ γιὰ κάθε ἀριθμὸ (οἱ, αἱ, τὰ), στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα ἔχει ἓνα μοναδικὸν τύπον γιὰ ὅλα τὰ γένη καὶ ἀριθμούς: τὸ *the*.

Παράδειγμα: *the man* (ὁ ἄνδρας) - *the men* (οἱ ἄνδρες), *the woman* (ἡ γυναῖκα) - *the women* (αἱ γυναῖκες), *the boy* (τὸ ἄγριον) - *the boys* (τὰ ἄγρια), κ.λ.π.

Β. Τὸ *Definite Article* χρησιμοποιεῖται στὴν Ἀγγλική:

1. Μὲ ὀνόματα ποταμῶν, θαλασσῶν, ὠκεανῶν, κόλπων, ὄρμων, ὄροσειρῶν, (ὄχι μεμονωμένων ὄρεων), συμπλεγμάτων νήσων (ὄχι μεμονωμένων νήσων).

Παράδειγμα: α) *The Thames* is a river which passes through London. (Ὁ Τάμεσις εἶναι ποταμὸς ποὺ διασχίζει τὸ Λονδίνον).

β) *The Straits of Gibraltair* join *the Atlantic Ocean* and *the Mediterranean Sea*. (Τὰ στενὰ τοῦ Γιβραλτάρ ἐνώνουν τὸν Ἀτλαντικὸν Ὠκεανὸν καὶ τὴν Μεσόγειον θάλασσαν).

γ) *The Aleutians* are islands in *the Bering Sea*. (αἱ Ἀλεούτιοι εἶναι νῆσοι στὴ Βερίγγιον θάλασσαν), ἐνῶ: *Aegina* (καὶ ὄχι: *the Aegina*) and *Salamis* (καὶ ὄχι *the Salamis*) are islands in

the Saronicos. (ἡ Αἴγινα καὶ ἡ Σαλαμίς εἶναι νῆσοι στὸν Σαρωνικό).

δ) An alpinist is one who climbs *the Alps* or other high mountains. (Ἀλпинιστὴς εἶναι ἓνας ποὺ σκαρφαλώνει στὶς Ἀλπεις ἢ σὲ ἄλλα ὑψηλὰ βουνά), ἐνῶ: *Olympus* (καὶ ὄχι *the Olympus*) is the highest mountain in Greece. (Ὁ Ὀλυμπος εἶναι τὸ ὑψηλότερο βουνὸ στὴν Ἑλλάδα).

2. Μὲ ὀνόματα ἐφημερίδων καὶ περιοδικῶν, ὥς π. χ. Many newspapers and magazines are issued in Athens such as *the "Tribune,,*, *the "Acropolis,,*, *the "Spectator,,*, etc. (Στὰς Ἀθήνας ἐκδίδονται πολλὲς ἐφημερίδες καὶ περιοδικά, ὅπως τὸ "*Βῆμα,,*" ἢ "*Ἀκρόπολις,,*" ὁ "*Θεατὴς,,*" κ.λ.π.).

3. Μὲ ὀνόματα πλοίων καὶ τραίνων, ὅπως π. χ. α) Last month I travelled from Piraeus to Marseilles by *the "Aeolia,,*. (Τὸν περασμένο μῆνα ταξίδευσα ἀπὸ τὸν Πειραιᾶ στὴ Μασσαλία μὲ τὴν "*Αἰολία,,*").

β) *The "Flying Scotchman,,* was the fastest train between London and Aberdeen. (Ὁ "*Ίπτάμενος Σκωτσέζος,,*" ἦταν τὸ πῶς ταχὺ τραῖνο μεταξὺ Λονδίνου καὶ Ἀμπερντίν). (Σκωτίας).

4. Μὲ ὀνόματα δημοσίων κτιρίων, ἰδρυμάτων κ.λ.π., ὅπως π. χ.: α) My son studied medicine in *the University* of Athens. (Ὁ γυιὸς μου σπούδασε ἰατρικὴν στὸ Πανεπιστήμιο τῶν Ἀθηνῶν).

β) The ministers met in *the Foreign Office*. (Οἱ ὑπουργοὶ συγκεντρώθηκαν στὸ Ὑπουργεῖον Ἐξωτερικῶν).

γ) The message was first read in the House of Representatives and later in *the Senate*. (Τὸ μήνυμα διαβάστηκε πρῶτα στὴ Βουλὴ καὶ ὕστερα στὴ Γερουσίαν).

5. Μὲ τὸν πληθυντικὸ κυρίων ὀνομάτων λαῶν καὶ οἰκογενειῶν, ὅπως π. χ. *the Greeks* (οἱ Ἕλληνες), *the Italians* (οἱ Ἰταλοί), *the Stuarts* (οἱ Στουάρτ), κ.λ.π.

6. Πρὸ κυρίων ὀνομάτων τὰ ὅποια ἀποτελοῦνται ἀπὸ ἐπίθετο καὶ οὐσιαστικό, ὅπως π. χ. : I heard that my friend's son has gone to *the Soviet Union*. (Ἦκουσα πὼς ὁ γυιὸς τοῦ φίλου μου πῆγε στὴ Σοβιετικὴ Ἑνωσι).

7. Πρὸ τοῦ ὑπερθετικοῦ βαθμοῦ τῶν ἐπιθέτων, ὅπως π.χ. :
α) Your son is *the best* pupil in the class. (Ὁ γυιὸς σας εἶναι ὁ πιὸ καλὸς μαθητὴς στὴν τάξι).

β) This is *the most* I can do for you. (Αὐτὸ εἶναι τὸ πιὸ καλὸ ποὺ μπορῶ νὰ κάνω γιὰ σᾶς).

γ) There isn't *the least* wind to-day. (Δὲν ὑπάρχει οὔτε ἐλάχιστος ἀέρας σήμερα).

8. Ὄταν προηγεῖται ἐπιθέτων καὶ μετοχῶν τοῦ *Past Tense* καὶ ἐφ' ὅσον τὰ ἐπίθετα καὶ αἱ μετοχαὶ χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ ἔννοιαν πληθυντικοῦ, ὅπως π. χ. : α) *The rich* ought to help the poor. (Οἱ πλούσιοι ὀφείλουν νὰ βοηθοῦν τοὺς φτωχοὺς).

β) *The wounded* were quickly taken to hospital. (Οἱ τραυματισμένοι μετεφέρθησαν σύντομα στὸ Νοσοκομεῖο).

9. Μὲ ἐπιρρήματα συγκριτικοῦ βαθμοῦ τὰ ὅποια δείχνουν πὼς δύο πράγματα μεταβάλλονται κατὰ τὴν ἴδια ἀναλογία, ὅπως π.χ. : *The more* one has *the more* one wants. (Ὅσα περισσότερα ἔχει κανεὶς, τόσα περισσότερα ἐπιθυμεῖ).

10. Μὲ τὸν ἐνικὸν ἀριθμὸ κοινοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ ἐφ' ὅσον μὲ τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν ἐννοοῦμεν ὁλόκληρη τάξι, ὅπως π. χ. : *The tiger* is a fierce animal. (Αἱ τίγρεις εἶναι ἄγρια ζῶα). Στὴν περίπτωσι ὅμως κατὰ τὴν ὁποίαν τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *tiger* χρησιμοποιηθῇ στὴν πρότασι στὸν πληθυντικὸν ἀριθμὸ, τότε τὸ ὀριστικὸν ἄρθρον *the* παραλείπεται, ἥτοι : *Tigers* (καὶ ὅχι : *the tigers*) are fierce animals.

Τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ *man* καὶ *woman* χρησιμοποιοῦνται στὸν ἐνικὸν ἀριθμὸ χωρὶς τὸ ὀριστικὸν ἄρθρον μόνον ὅταν τὸ μὲν *man* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν γενικὴν ἔννοιαν τοῦ ἀνθρωπίνου γένους, τὸ δὲ *woman* μὲ τὴν γενικὴν ἔννοιαν ὅλων τῶν γυναικῶν, ὅπως π. χ.

α) *Man* (καὶ ὄχι: *the man*) is mortal. (Οἱ ἄνθρωποι εἶναι θνητοί).

β) *Woman* (καὶ ὄχι: *the woman*) is weaker than man. (Αἱ γυναῖκες εἶναι πρὸ ἀδύνατες ἀπὸ τοὺς ἄνδρας).

Γ. Τὸ *Definite Article* παραλείπεται:

1. "Όταν πρόκειται περὶ κοινοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ τὸ ὁποῖον χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ γενικὴν ἔννοιαν, ὅπως π. χ. *I like wine*. (Μ' ἀρέσει τὸ κρασί), ἐνῶ: *I like the wine* of that hotel. (Μ' ἀρέσει τὸ κρασί ἐκείνου τοῦ ξενοδοχείου).

2. "Όταν πρόκειται περὶ κοινοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ τὸ ὁποῖον σημαίνει ὕλην καὶ ἐφ' ὅσον χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ γενικὴν ἔννοιαν, ὅπως π. χ.: *Butter* is made from *milk*. (Τὸ βούτυρο γίνεται ἀπὸ γάλα), ἐνῶ: *The butter* you gave me is bad. (Τὸ βούτυρο πὸν μοῦ δώσατε δὲν εἶναι καλόν).

3. "Όταν πρόκειται περὶ κοινοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ τὸ ὁποῖον χρησιμοποιεῖται στὸν πληθυντικὸν ἀριθμὸ μὲ ἔννοια γενικὴ, ὅπως π.χ.: *Books* are good companions. (Τὰ βιβλία εἶναι καλοὶ σύντροφοι), ἐνῶ: *The books* I bought yesterday are very interesting. (Τὰ βιβλία πὸν ἠγόρασα χθὲς εἶναι πολὺ ἐνδιαφέροντα).

4. "Όταν πρόκειται περὶ κυρίων ὀνομάτων προσώπων, χωρῶν, πόλεων, ὁδῶν, κλπ. ὅπως π. χ.:

α) *George* lives in *Larissa*. (Ὁ Γεῶργος μένει στὴ Λάρισα).

β) Next month I shall go to *England* and *France*. (Τὸν προσεχῇ μῆνα θὰ πηγαίνω στὴν Ἀγγλία καὶ τὴ Γαλλία).

γ) *Athens* has a good climate. (Αἱ Ἀθῆναι ἔχουν καλὸ κλίμα).

δ) I live in *Patission* street. (Μένω στὴν ὁδὸ Πατησίων).

ε) *Sunday* is a day of rest. (Ἡ Κυριακὴ εἶναι ἡμέρα ἀναπαύσεως).

5. "Όταν πρόκειται περὶ ἀφηρημένων οὐσιαστικῶν καὶ μόνον ὅταν ταῦτα χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ γενικὴν ἔννοιαν. "Όταν

ὁμῶς ἀναφερόμεθα σὲ συγκεκριμένη περίπτωσι τότε τὰ ἀφρημένα οὐσιαστικά παίρνουν ἄρθρον, ὅπως π. χ.:

α) *Generosity* is a virtue. (Ἡ γενναιοδωρία εἶναι ἀρετή), ἐνῶ: *The generosity* of your father is above question. (Ἡ γενναιοδωρία τοῦ πατρὸς σας δὲν συζητεῖται).

6. Πρὸ τῆς λέξεως *home*, ὅπως π. χ.: *I go home*, *I come home*, ἐνῶ: *I go to the office*.

7. Ὄταν περισσότερα τοῦ ἐνὸς κοινὰ οὐσιαστικά ἀκολουθοῦν τὸ ἓνα κατόπιν τοῦ ἄλλου, τότε ὁριστικὸν ἄρθρον παίρνει μόνον τὸ πρῶτον, ὅπως π. χ.: *The stomach, bowels, and kidneys* are organs which... (Τὸ στομάχι, τὰ ἔντερα καὶ τὰ νεφρὰ εἶναι ὄργανα, τὰ ὁποῖα...)

II. INDEFINITE ARTICLE

(ΑΟΡΙΣΤΟΝ ΑΡΘΡΟΝ)

A. Τὸ *Indefinite article* εἶναι *a* πρὸ συμφώνου, (πλὴν τοῦ ἀφώνου *h*), καὶ *an* πρὸ φωνηέντος (πλὴν τῶν *eu* καὶ *ū*) καὶ πρὸ ἀφώνου *h*, ὅπως π. χ.: *a dog*, *a boy*, *an exercise*, *an order*, *an honest man*, *an ulcer*, ἐνῶ: *a unit*, *a eulogy*.

B. Τὸ *indefinite article* χρησιμοποιεῖται:

1. Μὲ τὴ σημασία τοῦ «ἓνας, μία, ἓνα», ὅπως π. χ.: *There is a book* on the table. (Στὸ τραπέζι ὑπάρχει ἓνα βιβλίο).

2. Πρὸ τῶν λέξεων *dozen, hundred, thousand*, κλπ, ὅπως π.χ.:
α] *There were a hundred sheep* in the field. (Στὸ λιβάδι ἦσαν ἑκατὸ πρόβατα).

β] *I bought a dozen bottles* of wine. (Ἀγόρασα μιὰ δωδεκάδα μπουτίλλιες κρασιοῦ).

3. Μὲ τὸν ἐνικὸν ἀριθμὸ κοινῶν οὐσιαστικῶν τὰ ὁποῖα λαμβάνονται μὲ γενικὴν ἔννοιαν, ὁπότε τὸ ἀόριστον ἄρθρον ἔχει τὴ σημασίαν τοῦ *each, any, every*, ὅπως π. χ.:

α) *A horse is an animal*—*Each horse is an animal*—*Horses are animals.* (Κάθε ἄλλογο εἶναι ζῶον—Τὰ ἄλογα εἶναι ζῶα).

β) *A square has four sides*—*Each square has four sides.* (Κάθε τετράγωνον ἔχει 4 πλευρὲς—Τὰ τετράγωνα ἔχουν 4 πλευρὲς).

4. Εἰς τίς φράσεις: *a great many, a few, a little*, ὅπως π.χ.
α) *He has read a great many books.* (ἔχει διαβάσει πάρα πολλὰ βιβλία). β) *Only a few people could understand the book.* (Μόνον λίγοι μποροῦσαν νὰ καταλάβουν τὸ βιβλίον), κλπ

5. Σὲ μερικὲς ἰδιωματικὰς φράσεις, ὅπως π.χ.

α) *I have a headache* (ἔχω πονοκέφαλον).

β) *He is in a hurry.* (Εἶναι βιαστικὸς), κλπ.

6. Πρὸ οὐσιαστικῶν ποὺ ἐκφράζουν μονάδα μετρήσεως, βάρους, χρόνου, ὅπως π. χ.

α) *Three times a day.* (Τρεῖς φορές τὴν ἡμέραν).

β) *half an hour* (μισὴ ὥρα).

γ) *half a pound* (μισὴ λίμπρα), κλπ.

Γ. Τὸ *Indefinite article* παραλείπεται.

1. Ὅταν πρόκειται περὶ ἀφηρημένων οὐσιαστικῶν καὶ μόνον, ὅταν ταῦτα χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ γενικὴν ἔννοιαν. Ὅταν ὁμως ἀναφερόμεθα σὲ συγκεκριμένη περίπτωσι καὶ θέλομεν νὰ τονισθῇ ἡ ἀξία τῆς ἐκφραζομένης ἐννοίας, τότε χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ *indefinite article*, ὅπως π. χ. *Generosity is a virtue.* (Ἡ γενναιοῦτης εἶναι ἀρετὴ), ἐνῶ: *He behaved with a generosity I did not expect.* (Συμπεριφέρθηκε μὲ γενναιοῦτητα ποὺ δὲν περίμενα).

2. Πρὸ τῶν οὐσιαστικῶν *health* (ὕγεια) καὶ *permission* (ἄδεια), ὅπως π. χ. α) *I am in good health*, καὶ ὄχι: *I am in a good health.* β) *I gave him permission to go*, καὶ ὄχι: *I gave him a permission to go.*

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ Ι.

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΟΥ ΑΡΘΡΟΥ

Fill in the blanks with the correct article (definite or indefinite), where necessary. (Τὰ κενὰ τῶν προτάσεων τῶν ἐπομένων προτάσεων νὰ συμπληρωθοῦν μὲ τὸ ὀριστικὸν ἢ ἀόριστον ἄρθρον, ὅπου τοῦτο ἀναγκαιοί).

A. 1. There is... book on... table. 2... book which is on... table is mine. 3... Ebro is... river which separates... Greece from... Turkey. 4. I read it this morning in... "Tribune,,. 5' My son is... tallest student in his class. 6. He always tells... lies. 7. What he said is... lie. 8... Pinios is... river which passes by... town of... Larissa. 9... George bought... new book. 10. Next month he will visit... Soviet Union. 11... fortune favours... brave. 12. He was faint with... hunger and... cold. 13. He is... greatest man on... earth. 14... justice is... important element in... good government. 15... Paris is... capital of... France.

B. 1. ...England fought with... France during the last war. 2. ...wealth and ... opportunity were ... chief factors in his success. 3. Our army is fighting in ... cause of ... justice. 4. What is ... date of ... discovery of ... America by ... Colombus? 5. ... love, ... hate, ... joy, ... fear and ... grief are ... emotions. 6. ... Sahara Desert is ... natural barrier that separates ... North and ... Central Africa. 7. Don't let ... children fall into ... bad habits. 8. ... stone, ... steel and ... glass are all hard substances. 9. He is gifted by ... nature with ... great talents. 10. ... sun gives us ... warmth and ... light. 11. ... sorrow gave way to ... smiles. 12. Give me ... liberty or give me ... death. 13. ... faith means believing something without ... proof. 14. teacher made ...

favourable report on ... boy's work at ... school 15. In ... time of .. war ... soldier's life is full of ... danger.

Γ. 1. He has some acquaintance with ... German, but does not speak ... language very well. 2. Did you read ... account of ... sinking of ... German battleship in ... newspaper yesterday? 3. It is ... absolute fact that ... earth goes round ... sun. 4. My brother has been out of ... work for ... year 5 ... drunken men are sometimes subject to ... allucinations. 6. There is ... rumor being circulated that ... Spain may soon enter ... war. 7. ... artificial heating hastens ... growth of ... plants. 8. ... last night I had such ... headache that I could hardly see. 9... Tom has got ahead of all ... other boys in ... class. 10. It was so hot ... day that we all stopped ... work and went home. 11. If ... secret gets out, there' ll be ... trouble. 12. It is reported that our troops met ... very little resitance from ... enemy.

Δ. 1. ... carelessness is often ... cause of ... fires. 2. We can't get rid of ... war until we get rid of ... causes of ... war. 3. In ... Far East, ... fighting has grown more intense. 4. He has only ... elementary knowledge of ... grammar. 5. ... country must care for ... families of ... soldiers who have been killed in ... war. 6, ... newspapers say that ... British raided ... city of ... Bremen twice yesterday. 7. We can learn much by reading about ... careers of ... great men. 8. Details of ... battle have not yet been received. 9. This is ... big, roughly made box in which ... goods are placed before being sent by ... rail or ... ship. 10. His son wrote such ... poor composition that ... teacher gave him ... very poor mark. 11. In fact, she has made such ... good progress that all ... other students look up to her. 12. I caught ... sight of him in ... crowd.

ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΝ ΔΕΥΤΕΡΟΝ

THE NOUN - ΤΟ ΟΥΣΙΑΣΤΙΚΟΝ

1. **Οὐσιαστικὸν** (noun) εἶναι λέξεις ποὺ σημαίνει πρόσωπον, ζῶον, πράγμα ἢ ἀφηρημένην ἔννοιαν, ὅπως π.χ. : teacher (πρόσωπον), dog (ζῶον), desk (πράγμα), knowledge (ἀφηρ. ἔννοια).

II. KINDS OF NOUNS. (Εἶδη οὐσιαστικῶν).

Τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης εἶναι τεσσάρων εἰδῶν :

1) *Common noun* (Κοινὸν οὐσιαστικὸν). Εἶναι τὸ κοινὸν ὄνομα κάθε προσώπου, ζώου, ἢ πράγματος τοῦ αὐτοῦ εἶδους, ὅπως π.χ. *girl, hat, horse*, κλπ.

2) *Proper noun* (Κύριον οὐσιαστικὸν). Εἶναι τὸ ὄνομα ἑνὸς ὀρισμένου προσώπου ἢ πράγματος, ὅπως π.χ. *George, Athens, Olympus*, κλπ.

3) *Collective noun* (Περίληπτικὸν οὐσιαστικὸν). Εἶναι τὸ ὄνομα ἀριθμοῦ τινὸς προσώπων, ζώων, ἢ πραγμάτων, τὰ ὅποια ὅλα μαζὺ ἀποτελοῦν ἓνα σύνολον, ὅπως π.χ. *army* (στρατὸς), *flock* (ἀγέλη) *bunch* (δέσμη), κλπ.

4) *Abstract noun* (*Αφηρημένον οὐσιαστικὸν). Εἶναι τὸ ὄνομα μιᾶς ἀφηρημένης ἐννοίας ἢ καταστάσεως, ὅπως π.χ. *whiteness* (λευκότης), *generosity* (γενναιοσύνη), *health* (ὕγεια), κλπ.

III. GENDER (ΓΕΝΟΣ)

A. Τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης δύνανται νὰ διακριθῶν σὲ τέσσαρα γένη.

1) *Masculine Gender* (*Αρσενικὸν γένος). Εἶναι τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ τὰ ὅποια ἀπὸ τὴ φύσιν εἶναι ἀρσενικά, ὅπως π.χ. *brother, boy, lion*, κλπ.

2. *Feminine Gender* (θηλυκὸν γένος). Εἶναι τὰ οὐσιαστικά τὰ ὅποια ἀπὸ τὴ φύσιν εἶναι θηλυκά, ὅπως π.χ.: *girl, sister, lioness*, κλπ.

3. *Common Gender*. (Κοινὸν γένος) Εἶναι τὰ οὐσιαστικά τὸ γένος τῶν ὁποίων δὲν φανερῶνεται ἀπὸ τὴ λέξιν, ὅπως π.χ.: *friend* (φίλος καὶ φίλη), *cousin* (ἐξαδελφός καὶ ἐξαδέλφη), κλπ.

4. *Neuter Gender*. (Οὐδέτερον γένος). Εἶναι τὰ ἄψυχα πράγματα, ὅπως π.χ.: *table, book, house*, κλπ.

IV. ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΤΟΥ ΘΗΛΥΚΟΥ ΓΕΝΟΥΣ

1. Τὸ θηλυκὸν γένος σχηματίζεται :

α) Ἀπὸ οὐσιαστικὰ γένους ἀρσενικοῦ μὲ τὴν προσθήκην τῆς καταλήξεως *ess*, ὅπως π.χ.: *heir* (κληρονόμος) - θηλ. *heiress, lion* (λέων) - θηλ. *lioness, author* (συγγραφεὺς) - θηλ. *authoress, priest* (ιερεὺς) - θηλ. *priestess*, κλπ. Τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *actor* (ἡθοποιὸς) ἔχει θηλυκὸν *actress*, καὶ τὸ *tiger* (τίγρις) ἔχει θηλυκὸν *tigress*.

β) Μὲ σύνθετες λέξεις τῶν ὁποίων τὸ πρῶτον συνθετικὸν εἶναι λέξις ποὺ δείχνει τὸ γένος, ὅπως π.χ.: *doctor* (γιατρός) - θηλ. *woman-doctor, servant* (ὑπηρέτης) - θηλ. *maid-servant, cock-sparrow* (σπουργίτης) - θηλ. *hen-sparrow*, κλπ.

γ) Πολλὰ οὐσιαστικά τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης ἔχουν διαφορετικὸν τύπον σὲ κάθε γένος, ὅπως π.χ.: *husband* (ὁ σύζυγος) - *wife* (ἡ σύζυγος), *boy* (ἄγόρι) - *girl* (κορίτσι), *nephew* (ἀνεψιὸς) *niece* (ἀνεψιά), *brother* (ἀδελφός) - *sister* (ἀδελφή), *son* (γυιὸς) *daughter* (κόρη) κλπ.

δ) Οὐσιαστικά εἰς *or* προερχόμενα ἐκ τῆς λατινικῆς γλώσσης σχηματίζουν τὸ θηλυκὸν γένος διὰ τῆς μεταβολῆς τοῦ *or* εἰς *rix*, ὅπως π.χ.: *executor* (ἐκτελεστής) - θηλ. *executrix, testator* (διαθέτης) - θηλ. *testatrix*, κλπ.

ε) Αἱ λέξεις *Czar* (Τσάρος), *hero* (ἥρωας) καὶ *Sultan* (σουλτάνος), προερχόμενες ἀπὸ ξένες γλώσσες, σχηματίζουν ἀντιστοίχως τὸ θηλυκὸν γένος *Czarina, heroine* καὶ *Sultana*.

V. NUMBER (ΑΡΙΘΜΟΣ).

A. Οἱ ἀριθμοὶ εἶναι δύο : α) *Singular* (ἐνικός), καὶ β) *Plural* (πληθυντικός).

B. Σχηματισμὸς τοῦ Πληθυντικοῦ.

Ὁ πληθυντικὸς τῶν οὐσιαστικῶν σχηματίζεται :

1. Μὲ τὴν προσθήκην ἑνὸς *s* στὸ τέλος τοῦ ἐνικοῦ, ὅπως π. χ. : *boy* - πληθ. *boys*, *table* - πληθ. *tables*, *girl* - πληθ. *girls*, κλπ.

2. Μὲ τὴν προσθήκην στὸ τέλος τοῦ ἐνικοῦ τῆς καταλήξεως *es*, διὰ τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ τελειῶνῃ στὸν ἐνικὸ σὲ *ch*, *s*, *sh*, *x*, *z*, ἢ *o*, ὅπως π. χ. *church* - πληθ. *churches*, *glass* - πληθ. *glasses*, *box* - πληθ. *boxes*, *potato* - πληθ. *potatoes*, κλπ.

Ἐξαιροῦνται τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ τὰ ὁποῖα τελειῶνουν σὲ *ch*, καὶ τῶν ὁποίων τὸ *ch* προφέρεται ὡς *k*, ὅπως π. χ. τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ *monarch* (μονάρχης), *stomach* (στομάχι), κ.λ.π.

3. Ξένες λέξεις αἱ ὁποῖες τελειῶνουν σὲ *o*, σχηματίζουν τὸν πληθυντικὸν μὲ τὴν προσθήκην στὸ τέλος τοῦ ἐνικοῦ ἑνὸς *s*, ὅπως π. χ. *piano* - πληθ. *pianos*.

4. Οὐσιαστικὰ τὰ ὁποῖα τελειῶνουν σὲ *y* τοῦ ὁποίου προηγεῖται σύμφωνον σχηματίζουν τὸν πληθυντικὸν μὲ τὴν μετατροπὴ τοῦ *y* εἰς *i* καὶ τὴν προσθήκην τῆς καταλήξεως *es*, ὅπως π. χ. : *lady* - πληθ. *ladies*, *fly* - πληθ. *flies*, κ.λ.π.

5. Οὐσιαστικὰ τὰ ὁποῖα τελειῶνουν σὲ *f* σχηματίζουν τὸν πληθυντικὸν μὲ τὴν μετατροπὴ τοῦ τελικοῦ *f* σὲ *v* καὶ τὴν προσθήκην τῆς καταλήξεως *es*, ὅπως π. χ. : *leaf* (φύλλον) - πληθ. *leaves*, *calf* (μόσχος) - πληθ. *calves*, κλπ.. Ἐπίσης τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ τὰ ὁποῖα τελειῶνουν στὸν ἐνικὸ σὲ *fe* σχηματίζουν τὸν πληθυντικὸν μὲ τὴν μετατροπὴ τοῦ *fe* εἰς *ves*, ὅπως π. χ. : *wife* - πληθ. *wives*, *knife* - πληθ. *knives*, κ.λ.π.

Ἐξαιροῦνται τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ *gulf* (κόλπος), *safe* (χορηματοκιβώτιο), *reef* (ὑφαλός), καθὼς καὶ ὅσα τελειῶνουν σὲ *oo*, *ief*, *rf*, καὶ *ff*, τὰ ὁποῖα σχηματίζουν τὸν πληθυντικὸν μὲ τὴν προσθήκην ἑνὸς *s*, ὅπως

π. χ. : *gulf* - πληθ. *gulfs*, *safe* - πληθ. *safes*, *reef* - πληθ. *reefs*, *roof* (στέγη) - πληθ. *roofs*, *chief* (ἀρχηγός) πληθ. *chiefs*, *dwarf* (νάνος) - πληθ. *dwarfs*, *cliff* - πληθ. *cliffs*, κ.λ.π.

6. Μερικά οὐσιαστικά σχηματίζουν τὸν πληθυντικὸν μὲ τὴν μεταβολὴ τῶν φωνηέντων των, ὅπως π. χ. *man* - πληθ. *men*, *tooth* - πληθ. *teeth*, *foot* - πληθ. *feet*, *mouse* - πληθ. *mice*, κλπ.

7. Τρία οὐσιαστικά σχηματίζουν τὸν πληθυντικὸν μὲ τὴν προσθήκη τῆς καταλήξεως *en*, ἢ *ren*. Ταῦτα εἶναι : *ox* - πληθ. *oxen*, *child* - πληθ. *children*, καὶ *brother* - πληθ. *brothers* καὶ *brethren*.

8. Μερικά οὐσιαστικά παραμένουν ἀμετάβλητα στὸν πληθυντικόν, ὅπως π. χ. : *sheep* (πρόβατο) - πληθ. *sheep* (πρόβατα), *deer*, (ἐλάφι) - πληθ. *deer* (ἐλάφια), κ.λ.π.

9. Μερικά οὐσιαστικά τὰ ὁποῖα προέρχονται ἀπὸ ξένες γλώσσες διατηροῦν τὸν πληθυντικὸν τῆς ξένης γλώσσης, ὅπως π. χ. : *phenomenon* - πληθ. *phenomena*, *terminus* - πληθ. *termini*, κ.λ.π.

10. Μερικά οὐσιαστικά ἔχουν δύο τύπους στὸν πληθυντικόν, ὅπως π. χ. : τὰ οὐσιαστικά *brother* - πληθ. *brothers* καὶ *brethren*, *penny* - πληθ. *pennies* καὶ *pence*, *index* - πληθ. *indexes* καὶ *indices*, κ.λ.π.

11. Μερικά οὐσιαστικά ἀπαντοῦν μόνον στὸν ἐνικὸν ἀριθμὸν, ὅπως π. χ. τὰ οὐσιαστικά *furniture* (ἐπιπλα), *knowledge* (γνώσις) *advice* (συμβουλὴ), κλπ.

12. Μερικά οὐσιαστικά τὰ ὁποῖα σημαίνουν ὕλην, ὅπως π. χ. τὰ οὐσιαστικά *coffee* (καφές), *wood* (ξύλο), κ.λ.π. δὲν ἔχουν πληθυντικόν, ἐφ' ὅσον χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ τὴν γενικὴν ἔννοια τῆς ὕλης. Ὅταν ὅμως χρησιμοποιοῦνται ὡς οὐσιαστικά τὰ ὁποῖα ἐπιδέχονται μέτρησιν μὲ ἀπολύτους ἀριθμοὺς τότε ἀπαντοῦν καὶ στὸν πληθυντικόν ἀριθμὸν.

Παραδείγματα : α) *This table is made of wood.* (Αὐτὸ ἐδῶ τὸ τραπέζι ἔχει γίνει ἀπὸ ξύλο). Στὴν πρότασιν αὕτῃ τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *wood* ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τῆς ὕλης καὶ μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν αὐτὴν δὲν χρησι-

μποιείται στὸν πληθυντικὸν ἀριθμὸ. Δὲν δυνάμεθα δηλ. νὰ ποῦμε : These tables are made *of woods*. Ἐνῶ στὴν πρότασι : There are *many woods* in Scotland. (Στὴ Σκωτία ὑπάρχουν πολλὰ δάση), τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *wood* ἐκφράζει κάτι τὸ ὁποῖον δύναται νὰ μετρηθῇ μὲ ἀπολύτους ἀριθμοὺς καὶ ἐπομένως ἀπαντᾷ στὸν πληθυντικὸν ἀριθμὸ).

β) We buy *coffee* from South America. (Ἀγοράζομεν καφέ ἀπὸ τὴν Νότιον Ἀμερική). Μὲ τὴν γενικὴ ἔννοια τῆς ὕλης τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *coffee* δὲν ἀπαντᾷ στὸν πληθυντικὸν ἀριθμὸ. Ἐνῶ δυνάμεθα νὰ ποῦμε : Yesterday I drank *three coffees*. (Χθὲς ἔπια τρεῖς καφέδες).

13. Μερικὰ οὐσιαστικὰ ἀπαντοῦν μόνον στὸν πληθυντικὸν ἀριθμὸν, ὅπως π. χ. τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ *scissors* (ψαλίδι), *trousers* (παντελόνι), *compasses* (διαβήτη), κ.λ.π.

14. Ὅταν ἓνα οὐσιαστικὸν εἶναι σύνθετον ἀπὸ οὐσιαστικὸ καὶ ἐπίθετο ἢ ἀπὸ δύο οὐσιαστικὰ ἀπὸ τὰ ὁποῖα τὸ δευτέρον ἐπέχει θέσιν ἐπιθέτου συνδεόμενον μὲ τὸ πρῶτο μὲ πρόθεσι, τότε πληθυντικὸ παίρνει μόνον τὸ πρῶτο οὐσιαστικόν, ὅπως π. χ. *court-martial* (στρατοδικεῖο) - πληθ. *courts-martial*, *father-in-law* (πεθερός) - πληθ. *fathers-in-law* (πεθεροί), *man-of-war* (πολεμικὸ πλοῖο) - πληθ. *men-of-war*, κλπ.

15. Ὅταν ἓνα οὐσιαστικὸν εἶναι σύνθετον ἀπὸ δύο οὐσιαστικά, τότε πληθυντικὸν παίρνει μόνον τὸ δεύτερον οὐσιαστικόν, ὅπως π. χ. *shoemaker* (παπουτσοῦς) - πληθ. *shoemakers*, *armchair* (πολυθρόνα) - πληθ. *armchairs*, κ.λ.π.

Ἐξαίρουνται αἱ σύνθετες λέξεις αἱ ὁποῖες ἀποτελοῦνται ἀπὸ δύο οὐσιαστικὰ ἐκ τῶν ὁποίων τὸ πρῶτον εἶναι τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *man* ἢ *woman*, ὁπότε πληθυντικὸν παίρνουν καὶ τὰ δύο, ὅπως π. χ. *man-servant* (ὑπηρέτης) - πληθ. *men-servants*, *woman-doctor* - πληθ. *women-doctors*, κ.λ.π.

16. Οὐσιαστικὰ σύνθετα ἀπὸ οὐσιαστικὸ καὶ τὴν λέξι *ful* παίρνουν τὸ *s* τοῦ πληθυντικοῦ στὸ τέλος τῆς λέξεως *ful*, ὅπως π. χ. *handful* (χουφτιά) - πληθ. *handfuls*, *mouthful* (μπουνκιά) - πληθ. *mouthfuls*.

17. Οὐσιαστικά σύνθετα ἀπὸ οὐσιαστικὸ καὶ ἐπίρρημα σχηματίζουν τὸν πληθυντικὸν μὲ τὸν πληθυντικὸν τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ καὶ τὸ ἐπίρρημα, ὅπως π. χ. *passer - by* (διαβάτης) - πληθ. *passers - by, looker - on* (θεατῆς) - πληθ. *lookers - on*, κ.λ.π.

VI. CASES (ΠΤΩΣΕΙΣ)

Αἱ πτώσεις εἶναι τέσσαρες: α) *Nominative*. (Ὀνομαστική).

β) *Genitive* ἢ *Possessive*. (Γενική ἢ Κτητική).

γ) *Dative* (Δοτική), καὶ

δ) *Objective*. (Αἰτιατική ἢ Ἀντικειμενική).

A. *Nominative*. (Ὀνομαστική). Χρησιμοποιεῖται προκειμένου περὶ οὐσιαστικοῦ τὸ ὁποῖον εἶναι ὑποκείμενο μιᾶς προτάσεως, ὅπως π. χ. στὶς προτάσεις.

α) *The doctor is good*.

β) *The house is high*, ὅπου τὰ οὐσιαστικά *the doctor*, καὶ *the house* εἶναι πτώσεως ὀνομαστικῆς.

B. *Genitive* ἢ *Possessive*. (Γενική ἢ Κτητική). Χρησιμοποιεῖται κυρίως, ὅταν πρόκειται νὰ δηλώσωμεν τὸν κάτοχο καὶ σχηματίζεται:

1. Μὲ τὴν πρόθεσιν *of*, ὅταν τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ τὸ ὁποῖον σημαίνει τὸν κάτοχον εἶναι ἄψυχον, ὅπως π. χ.:

α) *The legs of the chair*. (Τὰ πόδια τῆς καρέκλας).

β) *The front door of the house*. (Ἡ κυρία εἴσοδος τοῦ σπιτιοῦ), κ.λ.π.

2. Μὲ τὴν προσθήκην ἑνὸς *'s* (*s* μὲ ἀπόστροφο) στὸ τέλος τοῦ ἑνικοῦ ἢ τοῦ πληθυντικοῦ τῶν οὐσιαστικῶν τὰ ὁποῖα δὲν τελειώνουν στὸν ἑνικὸν ἢ πληθυντικὸν σὲ *s* καὶ ἐφόσον τὸ οὐσιαστικὸ τὸ ὁποῖον φανερώνει τὸν κάτοχο εἶναι ἔμψυχον, ὅπως π. χ.:

α) *the teacher's name*,

β) *the men's work*.

γ) *the dog's tail*, κ.λ.π.

3. Μὲ τὴν προσθήκην μόνον τῆς ἀποστροφῆς στὸ τέλος τοῦ πληθυντικοῦ τῶν οὐσιαστικῶν τὰ ὁποῖα τελειώνουν σὲ *s*, ὅπως π. χ.

- α) *the boys' school*,
β) *the girls' teacher*, κλπ.

4. Μὲ τὴν προσθήκην μόνον τῆς ἀποστρόφου, ὅταν ἡ τελευταία συλλαβὴ τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ τὸ ὁποῖον φανερώνει τὸν κάτοχον ἀρχίζει με *s* καὶ τελειώνει σὲ *s*, ὅπως π. χ.: *Moses's Laws* (οἱ Νόμοι τοῦ Μωϋσῆ), ἐνῶ: *Venus's beauty*. (ἡ ὁμορφιὰ τῆς Ἀφροδίτης). Ἐξαίρεσις γίνεται μὲ τὶς φράσεις *Sophocles' tragedies* καὶ *Hercules' works* στὶς ὁποῖες ἡ γενικὴ τῶν κυρίων ὀνομάτων σχηματίζεται μὲ τὴν προσθήκην τῆς ἀποστρόφου.

ΣΗΜ. Ἡ γενικὴ χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης σὲ μερικὰς φράσεις αἱ ὁποῖες σημαίνουν χρόνον, χώρον ἢ ποσότητα, ὅπως π. χ. στὶς φράσεις:

- α) *Three months' absence*. (Ἀπουσία τριῶν μηνῶν).
β) *A day's work*. (Δουλειὰ μιᾶς ἡμέρας).
γ) *A shilling's worth* (ἄξια ἐνὸς σελλινίου), κλπ.

Γ. *Dative*. (Δοτικὴ). Σχηματίζεται μὲ πρόθεσιν καὶ τὴν αἰτιατικὴ τῆς λέξεως καὶ χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν ἡ λέξις εἶναι ἔμμεσον ἀντικείμενον (*indirect object*) μιᾶς προτάσεως, ὅπως π. χ. στὶς προτάσεις:

α) *I sent a present to the doctor*. (Ἐστειλα ἓνα δῶρο στὸν γιατρό).

β) *I wrote a letter to my son*. (Ἐγραψα ἓνα γράμμα στὸν γιὸ μου). Τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ *to the doctor* καὶ *to my son* εἶναι πτώσεως δοτικῆς (ἔμμεσα ἀντικείμενα τῶν προτάσεων).

Δ. *Objective*. (Αἰτιατικὴ ἢ Ἀντικειμενικὴ).

1. Ἡ αἰτιατικὴ τῶν οὐσιαστικῶν δὲν διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὴν ὀνομαστικὴν. Ἐνα οὐσιαστικὸν θεωρεῖται πτώσεως αἰτιατικῆς, ὅταν εἶναι ἄμεσον ἀντικείμενον (*direct object*) μιᾶς προτάσεως, ὅπως π. χ. στὶς προτάσεις:

α) *I saw the teacher*.

β) *I met the doctor*. Τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ *the teacher* καὶ *the doctor*, ὡς ἄμεσα ἀντικείμενα τῶν προτάσεων, θεωροῦνται πτώσεως αἰτιατικῆς.

2. Ὅταν ἓνα μεταβατικὸ ρῆμα μιᾶς προτάσεως ἔχει δύο ἀντικείμενα, ἀπὸ τὰ ὁποῖα τὸ ἓνα εἶναι πρόσωπον (οὐσιαστικὸν ἢ ἄντωνν-

μία) καὶ τὸ ἄλλο πράγμα, προηγείται δὲ τὸ πρόσωπον, τότε καὶ τὰ δύο ἀντικείμενα χρησιμοποιοῦνται σὲ πτῶσι αἰτιατικῇ καὶ λέγονται τὸ μὲν ἓνα (τὸ πρόσωπον) ἔμμεσον ἀντικείμενον (*indirect object*) τὸ δὲ ἄλλο (τὸ πράγμα) ἄμεσον ἀντικείμενον (*direct object*), ὅπως π.χ. στὸ παράδειγμα: *I taught his daughter English.* (Δίδαξα τὴν κόρη του Ἀγγλικά), ὅπου τὸ μὲν οὐσιαστικὸν *daughter* εἶναι ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο, τὸ δὲ οὐσιαστικὸν *English* εἶναι ἄμεσον ἀντικείμενο.

Στὴν περίπτωσι ὅμως κατὰ τὴν ὁποίαν προηγεῖται τὸ ἄμεσον ἀντικείμενον, τότε τὸ ἔμμεσον χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ πτῶσι δοτικῇ, ὅπως π.χ.: *I taught English to his daughter*, ὅπου τὸ ἔμμεσο ἀντικείμενο *to his daughter* εἶναι πτώσεως δοτικῆς.

ΣΗΜ. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ θὰ δοθοῦν μαζὺ μὲ τὰς ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου στὸ τέλος τοῦ περὶ ἐπιθέτου κεφαλαίου.

ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΝ ΤΡΙΤΟΝ

THE ADJECTIVE - ΤΟ ΕΠΙΘΕΤΟΝ

Ι. ΓΕΝΙΚΑ

Α. Τὸ ἐπίθετον στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα ἔχει τὸν αὐτὸν τύπον καὶ γιὰ τὰ τρία γένη, καθὼς ἐπίσης καὶ τοὺς δύο ἀριθμοὺς (ἐνικὸν καὶ πληθυντικόν). Π. χ. : the *good* father = ὁ καλὸς πατέρας. — the *good* mother = ἡ καλὴ μητέρα. — a *good* knife. = ἓνα καλὸ μαχαίρι. — the *good* men. = οἱ καλοὶ ἄνδρες. — the *good* women = αἱ καλαὶ γυναῖκες. — the *good* eggs. = τὰ καλὰ αὐγά. Καθὼς βλέπομεν, ἐνῶ στὴν Ἑλληνικὴ γλῶσσα τὸν ἐπίθετο συμφωνεῖ μὲ τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν ποὺ προσδιορίζει κατὰ γένος, ἀριθμὸν καὶ πτώσιν, στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα παραμένει ἀμετάβλητον ἀνεξαρχήτως, γένους, ἀριθμοῦ καὶ πτώσεως τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ.

Β. Τὸ ἐπίθετον κατ' ἀρχὴν προηγεῖται τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ. Ὅταν ὅμως τὸ ἐπίθετον ἔχει εἰς μίαν πρότασιν θέσιν κατηγορουμένου (*predicate*) τότε τοποθετεῖται ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα, ὅπως π. χ. : The book is *new*. — The father is *good*. — This egg is *bad*, κλπ.

II. KINDS OF ADJECTIVES. (Εἶδη ἐπιθετῶν)

Στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα τὰ ἐπίθετα εἶναι ἕξ εἰδῶν, τὰ ἑξῆς :

- A. *Adjectives of quality.* (Ποιοτικὰ ἐπίθετα).
- B. *Adjectives of quantity.* (Ποσοτικὰ ἐπίθετα).
- Γ. *Demonstrative Adjectives.* (Δεικτικὰ ἐπίθετα).
- Δ. *Possessive Adjectives.* (Κτητικὰ ἐπίθετα).
- Ε. *Distributive Adjectives.* (Διανεμητικὰ ἐπίθετα).
- ΣΤ. *Interrogative Adjectives.* (Ἑρωτηματικὰ ἐπίθετα).

A. *Adjectives of quality.* (Ποιοτικά επίθετα).

1. Τά ποιοτικά επίθετα σημαίνουν την ποιότητα τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ τὸ ὁποῖον προσδιορίζουν καὶ εἶναι τὰ περισσότερα εἰς ἀριθμὸν ἀπὸ τὰ λοιπὰ εἶδη ἐπιθέτων.

Αἱ λέξεις *good, bad, sick, happy*, κλπ. εἶναι ποιοτικά ἐπίθετα.

2. Ἐκ τῶν ποιοτικῶν ἐπιθέτων *tall* καὶ *high*, ποὺ ἔχουν τὴν αὐτὴν σημασίαν (ὑψηλός), τὸ μὲν πρῶτον «*tall*» χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ πρόσωπα, τὸ δὲ δεύτερον «*high*» γιὰ πράγματα, ὅπως π. χ. : *George is tall. The tree is high.*

ΣΗΜ. Τὸ ἀντίστοιχον οὐσιαστικὸν τῶν ἐπιθέτων *tall* καὶ *high* εἶναι τὸ *height* (ὕψος) καὶ χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ πρόσωπα καὶ πράγματα, ὅπως π. χ. : *George and Peter are the same height.* (Ὁ Γεώργιος καὶ ὁ Πέτρος ἔχουν τὸ αὐτὸ ὕψος) — *The tree and the house are the same height.* (Τὸ δένδρον καὶ τὸ σπίτι ἔχουν τὸ αὐτὸ ὕψος).

3. Μερικὰ ποιοτικά ἐπίθετα χρησιμοποιοῦνται στὸν ἐνικὸν ἀριθμὸν ὡς οὐσιαστικά καὶ μὲ ἔννοια πληθυντικοῦ, ὅπως π. χ. : *The rich are often not happy.* (Οἱ πλούσιοι συχνὰ δὲν εἶναι εὐτυχεῖς).

4. Ὑστερα ἀπὸ ῥήματα ποὺ σημαίνουν γεῦσιν ἢ ὀσφρησιν ἀκολουθοῦν ποιοτικά ἐπίθετα, ὡς τὰ *sweet* (γλυκός), *agreeable* (εὐχάριστος), *bitter*, (πικρός), κλπ.

Στις περιπτώσεις αὐτὲς τὰ ἐπίθετα ἔχουν τὴν ἔννοια τῶν ἀντιστοίχων ἐπιρρημάτων *sweetly, agreeably, bitterly*, κλπ., ὅπως π. χ. : *This music sounds defightful.* (Αὐτὴ ἡ μουσικὴ ἀκούεται εὐχάριστα). — *This flower smells agreeable.* (Αὐτὸ τὸ ἄνθος μυρίζει εὐχάριστα).

B. *Adjectives of quantity.* (Ποσοτικά ἐπίθετα).

Τὰ ποσοτικά ἐπίθετα εἶναι δύο εἰδῶν :

α. *Definite adjectives of quantity* (Ὁριστικά) καὶ

β. *Indefinite adjectives of quantity.* (Ἀόριστα).

α) Ὡς ὀριστικὰ ποσοτικά ἐπίθετα χρησιμοποιοῦνται οἱ ἀπόλυτοι ἀριθμοὶ *one, two, three*, κλπ. καὶ οἱ τακτικοὶ ἀριθμοὶ *first, second*, κλπ.

β) Ὡς ἀόριστα ποσοτικὰ ἐπίθετα χρησιμοποιοῦνται αἱ λέξεις *much, many, some, any, few, several*, κ.λ.π.

Χρησιμοποίησις τῶν ἀορίστων ποσοτικῶν ἐπιθέτων:

1. *much* καὶ *many*.

α) Τὸ ἐπίθετο *much* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ οὐσιαστικὰ ἐνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ καὶ ἔφ' ὅσον τὰ τελευταῖα ταῦτα σημαίνουν κάτι τὸ ὁποῖον δὲν μετροῦται μὲ ἀπολύτους ἀριθμούς, ὅπως π. χ. εἶναι τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ *water, money, time, oil*, κ.λ.π.

Πρὸ τῶν οὐσιαστικῶν *money* καὶ *time* χρησιμοποιεῖται τὸ ἐπίθετον *much* μόνον, ἐφόσον τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ λαμβάνονται μὲ τὴν γενικὴν ἔννοιαν τοῦ χρήματος καὶ τοῦ χρόνου, ὅπως π. χ. : *He has not much money.* (Δὲν ἔχει πολλὰ χρήματα). *I have not much time for sport.* (Δὲν ἔχω πολὺ καιρὸ γιὰ σπόρ).

Ὅταν ὁμως πρόκειται περὶ οὐσιαστικῶν τὰ ὁποῖα φανερόνουν ὑποδιαίρεσεις τοῦ χρήματος (δραχμαί, δολλάρια, κ.λ.π.), ἢ τοῦ χρόνου (ἔτη, μῆνες, κ.λ.π.) τότε πρὸ τῶν οὐσιαστικῶν αὐτῶν χρησιμοποιεῖται τὸ ἐπίθετον *many*, ὅπως π. χ. *He has not many* (καὶ ὄχι : *much*) *dollars. Many* (καὶ ὄχι : *much*) *years ago.*

β) Τὸ ἐπίθετον *many* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ οὐσιαστικὰ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ἔφ' ὅσον ταῦτα σημαίνουν κάτι πὺν δύναται νὰ μετρηθῇ μὲ ἀπολύτους ἀριθμούς, ὅπως εἶναι π. χ. τὰ οὐσιαστικὰ *book, tree, dog*, κ.λ.π.

γ) Τὰ ποσοτικὰ ἐπίθετα *much* καὶ *many* χρησιμοποιοῦνται ὑπὸ τὰς ἀνωτέρω προϋποθέσεις κυρίως σὲ ἀρνητικὰς προτάσεις. Σὲ καταφατικὰς προτάσεις, ἀντὶ τῶν *much* καὶ *many*, χρησιμοποιοῦνται φράσεις καὶ λέξεις ὡς αἱ ἐπόμενες.

Ἀντὶ τοῦ *much* αἱ φράσεις καὶ λέξεις : *plenty* (of), *a lot* (of), *a great deal*, *a large quantity*.

Ἀντὶ τοῦ *many* αἱ φράσεις καὶ λέξεις : *lots* (of), *a lot* (of), *plenty* (of), *a great many*, *a great number* (of).

Παράδειγματα : *He has plenty of money.* (Ἐχει πολλὰ χρήματα). *I bought a large quantity of sugar.* (Ἀγόρασα μεγάλη ποσότητα ζαχαρώς). *Don't hurry ; we have plenty of time.* (Μὴ βιάζεσθε ἔχομεν πολὺ καιρὸ). *A great many aeroplanes arrive here*

every day. (Πολλά αεροπλάνα φθάνουν ἑδῶ κάθε μέρα). A great number of soldiers were killed. (Πολλοὶ στρατιῶται ἐφονεύθησαν). A lot of Americans are now living in Greece. (Πολλοὶ Ἀμερικανοὶ ζοῦν τώρα στὴν Ἑλλάδα). I have lots of friends. (Ἔχω πολλοὺς φίλους).

δ) Τὰ ἐπίθετα *much* καὶ *many* χρησιμοποιοῦνται σὲ καταφατικές προτάσεις, ὅταν ἀναφέρονται στὸ ὑποκείμενο αὐτῶν, ὅπως π. χ. : *Many* people believed his story. (Πολλοὶ ἄνθρωποι πίστευσαν τὴν ἱστορία του).

ε) Τὰ ἐπίθετα *much* καὶ *many* χρησιμοποιοῦνται ἐπίσης σὲ καταφατικές προτάσεις ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ῥήματα «*to wonder*» καὶ «*to doubt*», καθὼς ἐπίσης ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὶς λέξεις *how*, *too*, *as*, καὶ *so*, ὅπως π. χ. : *I wonder* whether he has *much* money. (Διερωτῶμαι ἂν ἔχη πολλὰ χρήματα). *I doubt* whether *many* people will come. (Ἀμφιβάλω, ἂν θὰ ἔλθουν πολλοί). He has *too much* work to do. (Ἔχει νὰ κάνῃ πάρα πολλὴ δουλειά). There were *so many* people that . . . (Ἦταν τόσο πολὺς κόσμος, πού. . .). I know *how many* books he wants. (Ξέρω πόσα βιβλία θέλει).

2. *Some* καὶ *any*.

α) Τὸ ἀόριστο ποσοτικὸ ἐπίθετο *some* χρησιμοποιεῖται κυρίως σὲ καταφατικές προτάσεις, ἐνῶ τὸ *any* σὲ ἀρνητικές καὶ ἐρωτηματικές, ὅπως π. χ. : I want *some* paper. (Θέλω λίγο χαρτί). Give me *some* bread (Δόστε μου λίγο ψωμί). Have you *any* money? (Ἔχετε χρήματα;). I don't see *any* glasses on the table. (Δὲν βλέπω ποτήρια στὸ τραπέζι).

β) Τὸ ἀόριστο ποσοτικὸ ἐπίθετο *some* χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ἐρωτηματικές, καθὼς καὶ σὲ ἀρνητικο-ἐρωτηματικές προτάσεις, ὅταν πρόκειται περὶ ἐρωτήσεως γιὰ τὴν καταφατικὴν ἀπάντησιν τῆς ὁποίας εἶναι βέβαιος ὁ ἐρωτῶν, ὅπως π. χ. : Do you mind giving me *some* more tea? (Ἔχετε τὴν καλωσύνην νὰ μοῦ δώσετε λίγο ἀκόμη τσαί;).

Πρόκειται περὶ ἐρωτήσεως ἡ ὁποία ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως : Please, give me *some* more tea. Aren't there *some* pens in that drawer? (Δὲν ὑπάρχουν πέννες σ' αὐτὸ τὸ συρτάρι;) (Ὁ ἐρωτῶν εἶναι βέβαιος, ὅτι ὑπάρχουν πέννες).

γ) Τὸ ἀόριστο ποσοτικὸν ἐπίθετο *any* χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ σὲ καταφατικὰς προτάσεις στὶς ἑξῆς περιπτώσεις :

— Ὅταν τὸ *any* ἔχῃ τὴν ἔννοιαν τοῦ «ὅ,τιδήποτε», ὅπως π.χ. : Give me a book ; *any* book. (Δός τε μου ἓνα βιβλίον ὅ,τιδήποτε βιβλίον). I shall pay *any* price. (Θὰ πληρώσω ὁποιαδήποτε τιμὴν).

— Ὅταν διὰ τῆς προτάσεως ἐκφράζεται ἀμφιβολία, θαυμασμός, ἢ ἀβεβαιότης, ὅπως π. χ. : I doubt whether he will have *any* chance. (Ἀμφιβάλλω, ἂν θὰ ἔχῃ ἐπιτυχίαν τινά).

— Ὅταν ἡ πρότασις, χωρὶς νὰ εἶναι σαφῶς ἀρνητικὴ, ἔχει ἔννοιαν ἀρνητικὴν. Τέτοια πρότασις εἶναι ἡ ἐκείνη ποὺ περιέχει μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς λέξεις *without, seldom*, κ.λ.π., ὅπως π. χ. : He did it *without any* mistake. (Τὸ ἔκανε χωρὶς λάθος). I *seldom* find *any* unknown words in an English text. (Σπανίως βρίσκω ἄγνωστες λέξεις σὲ Ἀγγλικὸν κείμενον).

δ) Τὰ ἀόριστα ποσοτικὰ ἐπίθετα *some* καὶ *any* μὲ τὶς λέξεις *one, body* καὶ *thing* σχηματίζουν τὶς ἀόριστες ἀντωνυμίας *someone, anyone, somebody, anybody, something, anything*, μὲ τὴν λέξιν δὲ *where* σχηματίζουν τὰ ἀόριστα ἐπιρρηματα *somewhere* καὶ *anywhere*.

3. *little* καὶ *few*.

α) Τὸ ἀόριστο ποσοτικὸν ἐπίθετο *little* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ οὐσιαστικὸν ἐνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, τὸ δὲ *few* μὲ οὐσιαστικὸν πληθυντικὸν ἀριθμοῦ, ὅπως π. χ. : He spent a *little* time at his work. (Δούλεψε λίγον στὴ δουλειά του). He spent a *few* minutes at his work. (Δούλεψε λίγα λεπτὰ στὴ δουλειά του).

β) Ὅταν τὰ ἐπίθετα *little* καὶ *few* δὲν ἔχουν πρὸ αὐτῶν τὸ ἀόριστον ἄρθρον (*a* ἢ *an*) τότε ἔχουν τὴν ἔννοιαν τοῦ «ἐντελῶς λίγον» (σχεδὸν τίποτε), ὅπως π. χ. : I have *few* books. (Ἔχω ἐλάχιστα βιβλία), ἔνῳ : I have *a few* books. (Ἔχω μερικά βιβλία).

5. *all*.

Τὸ ἐπίθετον *all* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ οὐσιαστικὰ ἐνικοῦ μὲν ἀριθμοῦ, ἐφόσον ταῦτα δὲν ἐπιδέχονται μέτρησιν, πληθυντικὸν δὲ ἀριθμοῦ, ἐφόσον ἐπιδέχονται μέτρησιν, ὅπως π. χ. : *all* his money. *all* my friends.

Γ. *Demonstrative Adjectives* (Δεικτικά επίθετα).

Ὡς δεικτικά επίθετα χρησιμοποιοῦνται αἱ δεικτικὲς ἀντωνυμίαις *this, that, these* καὶ *those*, ὅπως π. χ. : *This book* is yours. (Αὐτὸ ἐδῶ τὸ βιβλίον εἶναι δικό σας). *That man* is my father. (Αὐτὸς ἐκεῖ ὁ ἄνδρας εἶναι πατέρας μου). I will take *these apples*. (Θὰ πάρω αὐτὰ ἐδῶ τὰ μήλα). Who are *those people*? (Ποιοὶ εἶναι αὐτοί ;).

Δ. *Possessive Adjectives*. (Κτητικά επίθετα).

α) Τὰ κτητικά επίθετα σημαίνουν κυριότητα καὶ εἶναι τὰ ἑξῆς : *my, thy, his, her, its, our, your, their*.

Ἐκ τῶν κτητικῶν ἐπιθέτων τὸ *his* εἶναι γιὰ τὸ ἀρσενικὸ γένος, τὸ *her* γιὰ τὸ θηλυκόν, τὸ *its* γιὰ τὸ οὐδέτερον, καὶ τὰ λοιπὰ καὶ γιὰ τὰ τρία γένη.

Π. χ. : *my hat*. (τὸ καπέλλο μου). *His brother*. (ὁ ἀδελφός του). *Her mother*. (ἡ μητέρα της). The horse broke *its leg*. (τὸ ἄλογο ἔσπασε τὸ πόδι του). *Our house*. (τὸ σπίτι μας). *Your father*, (ὁ πατέρα σας). *Their daughter*. (ἡ κόρη των). *Our children* (τὰ παιδιὰ μας). *Their parents*. (οἱ γονεῖς των).

β) Προκειμένου νὰ δώσωμεν ἔμφασι στὴν ἔννοιαν τῆς κτήσεως χρησιμοποιοῦμεν εὐθὺς μετὰ τὸ κτητικὸν ἐπίθετον τὴν λέξιν «*οἰον*» ὅπως π. χ. : That house is *his own*. (Αὐτὸ ἐκεῖ τὸ σπίτι εἶναι δικό του). I saw it with *my own* eyes. (Τὸ εἶδα μὲ τὰ ἴδια μου τὰ μάτια).

Ε. *Distributive Adjectives*. (Διανεμητικά επίθετα).

Ὡς διανεμητικά επίθετα χρησιμοποιοῦνται αἱ λέξεις *each, every, either, neither, both, other* καὶ *another*.

1. Τὸ ἐπίθετον *each* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν : «καθένα χωριστὰ ἀπὸ δύο ἢ περισσότερα πρόσωπα, ζῶα, ἢ πράγματα», ὅπως π. χ. : I gave some money to *each* one. (Ἐδωσα χρήματα στὸν καθένα). There was a baker's shop on *each* side (Ἐπὶ ἑκάστη ἑνὶ ἀγοραπωλειῷ σὲ κάθε πλευρά), κ.λ.π.

2. Τὸ ἐπίθετον *every* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν «καθένα

χωριστά ἀπὸ ἓν σύνολον προσώπων, ζώων ἢ πραγμάτων». Ἐνίοτε τὸ ἐπίθετον *every* ἔχει τὴν ἔννοιαν τοῦ ἐπιθέτου *all*, ὅποτε ἀντὶ τοῦ *every* μὲ τὸν ἐνικὸν τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ μποροῦμε νὰ χρησιμοποιήσωμε τὸ ἐπίθετον *all* μὲ τὸν πληθυντικὸν τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ εἰς τὸ ὁποῖον ἀναφέρεται. Π.χ. : Such things do not happen *every* day. (Τέτοια πράγματα δὲν συμβαίνουν κάθε μέρα). He has read *every* book (ἢ *all* the books) in the school. (Διάβασε τὸ κάθε βιβλίον (δὲν τὰ βιβλία) στὸ σχολεῖο, κ.λ.π.

3. Τὸ ἐπίθετον *either* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν : «τὸ ἓνα ἢ τὸ ἄλλο ἐκ δύο προσώπων, ζώων ἢ πραγμάτων», ὅπως π.χ. : You may go by *either* road. (Μπορεῖτε νὰ πάτε ἀπὸ τὸν ἓνα ἢ τὸν ἄλλον δρόμον). *Either* one may come to see me. (Μπορεῖ νὰ ἔλθῃ νὰ μὲ ἰδῇ ὁ ἓνας ἢ ὁ ἄλλος).

4. Τὸ ἐπίθετο *neither* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν «οὔτε τὸ ἓνα, οὔτε τὸ ἄλλο ἐκ δύο προσώπων, ζώων, ἢ πραγμάτων», ὅπως π.χ. : *Neither* book is of any use to me. (Οὔτε τὸ ἓνα, οὔτε τὸ ἄλλο βιβλίον—κανένα ἀπὸ τὰ δύο—δὲν μοῦ κάνει). I can agree in *neither* case. (Δὲν μπορῶ νὰ συμφωνήσω οὔτε στὴ μία οὔτε στὴν ἄλλη περιπτώσει).

5. Τὸ ἐπίθετο *both* σημαίνει : «καὶ τὸ ἓνα καὶ τὸ ἄλλο ἐκ δύο προσώπων, ζώων, πραγμάτων», ὅπως π.χ. : I want *both* books. (Θέλω καὶ τὸ ἓνα καὶ τὸ ἄλλο—ἀμφότερα-βιβλίον). *Both* boys may come to see me, κ.λ.π.

6. Τὸ ἐπίθετον *other* χρησιμοποιεῖται :

α) Μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν : «ὁ ἄλλος, ἡ, ον», ὅπως π.χ. : give me the *other* book. (Δόστε μου τὸ ἄλλο βιβλίον). Put it in your *other* hand. (Βάτε το στὸ ἄλλο σας χέρι). Ask me about it some *other* time. (Ρωτήστε με γι' αὐτὸ ἄλλῃ ᾠρᾳ), κ.λ.π.

β) Μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν τοῦ «καὶ ἄλλος-ἡ-ον ἐπὶ πλέον», ὅπως π.χ. : There are some *other* people waiting to see you. (Ἑπάρχουν καὶ ἄλλοι ἀκόμη ποὺ περιμένουν νὰ σᾶς ἰδοῦν).—How many *other* children have you? (Πόσα ἄλλα ἐπὶ πλέον-ἀκόμα-παιδιὰ ἔχετε;) κ.λ.π.

γ) Ὅταν προηγῇται τὸ *every*, μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν : «ὅλοι οἱ ἄλ-

λοι, αι, α», ἢ «κάθε δύο», ὅπως π. χ. : His father was saved but *every other* man in the ship was drowned. (Ὁ πατήρας του σώθηκε, ὅλοι ὅμως οἱ ἄλλοι ἄνδρες στὸ πλοῖο ἐπνίγησαν). — *Every other* day (week). (Κάθε δυὸ μέρες - ἑβδομάδες), κ.λ.π.

7. Τὸ ἐπίθετον *another* χρησιμοποιεῖται :

α) Μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν «ἕνας ἄλλος - η - ο, διαφορετικὸς» ὅπως π. χ. : I don't like this hat? please, show me *another* one. (Δὲν μ' ἀρέσει αὐτὸ τὸ καπέλλο· παρακαλῶ δεῖξατέ μου ἕνα ἄλλο - διαφορετικόν).

β) Μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν «ἕνας - μία - ἕνα ἀκόμῃ», ὅπως π. χ. : Won't you see *another* one? (Δὲν θὰ θέλατε νὰ ἰδῇτε ἕναν ἀκόμῃ;).

γ) Μὲ τὴν ἔννοιαν «ἕνας ἄλλος, - η - ον - παρόμοιος μὲ κάποιον, α, ο», ὅπως π. χ. : This young man is very clever; he may be *another* Edison. (Αὐτὸς ὁ νέος εἶναι ἔξυπνότερος· μπορεῖ νὰ γίνῃ ἕνας ἄλλος "Εδισον).

ΣΤ. *Interrogative Adjectives*. (Ἑρωτηματικὰ ἐπίθετα).

Ὅς ἐρωτηματικὰ ἐπίθετα χρησιμοποιοῦνται αἱ λέξεις *which* ? καὶ *what* ?

Π. χ. : *which* way shall we go? (Ποιὸν δρόμο θὰ πάρωμεν;). *What* books have you read on this subject? (Ποιά βιβλία διαβάσατε ἐπ' αὐτοῦ τοῦ θέματος;).

III. *DEGREES OF COMPARISON*. (ΒΑΘΜΟΙ ΣΥΓΚΡΙΣΕΩΣ).

Οἱ βαθμοὶ συγκρίσεως εἶναι τρεῖς : Positive (Θετικὸς), Comparative (Συγκριτικὸς) καὶ Superlative (Ὑπερθετικὸς).

A. *Comparative degree*. (Συγκριτικὸς βαθμὸς).

Ὁ Συγκριτικὸς βαθμὸς τῶν ἐπιθέτων σχηματίζεται :

1. Μὲ τὴν προσθήκην τῆς καταλήξεως *er* στὸ τέλος τοῦ θετικοῦ βαθμοῦ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου. Κατ' αὐτὸν τὸν τρόπον σχηματίζεται ὁ συγκριτικὸς βαθμὸς τῶν μονοσυλλάβων ἐπιθέτων καὶ ἐκ τῶν δισυλλάβων κυρίως ὅσα τελειώνουν σέ *y* καὶ *e*. Ἐξ αὐτῶν ὅσα λή-

γουν σὲ γ μετατρέπουν τὸ τελικὸν γ σὲ *i*, ἐνῶ ὅσα τελειώνουν σὲ *e* παίρνουν στὸ τέλος μόνον τὸ γράμμα *r*. Τέλος ὅσα ἔξ αὐτῶν τελειώνουν σὲ ἓνα σύμφωνο, πρὸ τοῦ ὁποίου ὑπάρχει ἓν μόνον φωνῆεν, παίρνοντας τὴν κατάληξιν *er*, διπλασιάζουν τὸ τελικὸ σύμφωνο.

Παράδειγμα: *long* - συγκρ: *longer*, *rich* - συγκρ: *richer*, *busy* - συγκρ: *busier*, *pretty* συγκρ: *prettier*, *safe* - συγκρ: *safer*, *sad* - συγκρ: *sadder*, *big* : συγκρ *bigger*, κ.λ.π.

2. Μὲ τὴν χρησιμοποίησι πρὸ τοῦ θετικοῦ βαθμοῦ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου τῆς λέξεως *more*. Κατ' αὐτὸν τὸν τρόπον σχηματίζεται ὁ συγκριτικὸς βαθμὸς τῶν ἐπιθέτων ποὺ ἔχουν περισσότερες τῶν δύο συλλαβῶν καὶ ἐκ τῶν δισυλλαβῶν ὅσα δὲν τελειώνουν σὲ γ ἢ *e*, ὅπως π. χ.: *expensive* - συγκ: *more expensive*, *beautiful* - συγκρ: *more beautiful*, *tender* - συγκρ: *more tender*, κ.λ.π.

B. *Superlative degree*. (Ὑπερθετικὸς βαθμὸς).

Ὁ ὑπερθετικὸς βαθμὸς τῶν ἐπιθέτων σχηματίζεται :

1. Μὲ τὴν προσθήκην τῆς καταλήξεως *est* στὸ τέλος τοῦ θετικοῦ βαθμοῦ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου. Τὴν κατάληξιν *est* παίρνουν τὰ ἐπίθετα τὰ ὁποῖα, καθὼς εἶδαμε, στὸν συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ παίρνουν τὴν κατάληξιν *er*, ὅπως π. χ.: *long* - ὑπερθ: *longest*, *rich* - ὑπερθ: *richest*, *busy* - ὑπερθ: *busiest*, *pretty* ὑπερθ: *prettiest*, *safe* - ὑπερθ.: *safest*, *sad* - ὑπερθ.: *saddest*, *big* - ὑπερθ.: *biggest*, κ.λ.π.

β) Μὲ τὴν χρησιμοποίησι πρὸ τοῦ θετικοῦ βαθμοῦ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου, τῆς λέξεως *most*. Κατ' αὐτὸν τὸν τρόπον σχηματίζεται ὁ συγκριτικὸς βαθμὸς τῶν ἐπιθέτων τὰ ὁποῖα στὸν συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ παίρνουν πρὸ αὐτῶν τὴν λέξιν *more*, ὅπως π. χ.: *expensive* - ὑπερθ.: *most expensive*, *beautiful* - ὑπερθ.: *most beautiful*, *tender* - ὑπερθ.: *most tender*, κ.λ.π.

Γ. Μερικά επίθετα σχηματίζουν ανωμάλως τούς βαθμούς των συγκρίσεως. Τὰ κυριώτερα τούτων εἶνα τὰ ἑξῆς :

Positive	Comparative	Superlative
bad	worse	worst
far	farther	farthest
	καὶ further	καὶ furthest
good	better	best
late	later	latest
	καὶ latter	καὶ last
little	less	least
many	more	most
much	more	most
old	older	oldest
	καὶ elder	καὶ eldest

Παρατηρήσεις :

1) Ὁ τύπος *farther* καὶ *farthest* τοῦ ἐπιθέτου *far* χρησιμοποιεῖται προκειμένου περὶ ἀποστάσεως, ὅπως π.χ. : *the farthest* side of the room. (Ἡ πρὸ ἐπιμήκης πλευρὰ τοῦ δωματίου). Ὁ τύπος *further* καὶ *furthest* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν πρόκειται νὰ δώσωμεν τὴν ἔννοια τῆς προσθήκης ὅπως π.χ. : I will give you *further* details. (Θὰ σὺς δώσω καὶ ἄλλες λεπτομέρειες).

2) Ἐκτῶν δύο τύπων *later* καὶ *latter* τοῦ συγκριτικοῦ βαθμοῦ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου *late*, ὁ μὲν πρῶτος χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ περιπτώσεις συγκρίσεως, ὁ δὲ δεύτερος χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν σημασίαν τοῦ δευτέρου ἐκ τῶν δύο, ὅπως π.χ. : Peter was late to-day, but George was *later*. (Ὁ Πέτρος ἑδράδυνε σήμερα, ὁ Γεώργιος ὁμοῦς ἑβράδυνε περισσότερο). I study French and English; the former language I speak well, the *latter* one not so well. (Μελετῶ Γαλλικὰ καὶ Ἀγγλικὰ τὴν πρώτη γλῶσσα μιλῶ καλὰ, τὴν τελευταία ὄχι τόσο καλὰ).

3) Ἐκ τῶν δύο τύπων *latest* καὶ *last* τοῦ ὑπερθετικοῦ βαθμοῦ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου *late*, ὁ μὲν πρῶτος χρησιμοποιεῖται προκειμένου περὶ τοῦ τελευταίου ἐκ τῶν ὑπαρχόντων (προσώπων, ζώων ἢ πραγμάτων)

χωρίς ν' αποκλείεται μελλοντικῶς ἢ ἐμφάνις καὶ ἄλλων, ὁ δὲ δευτέρως χρησιμοποιεῖται προκειμένου περὶ τοῦ τελευταίου ἐκ τῶν ὑπαρχόντων, ἀποκλειομένης μελλοντικῶς τῆς ἐμφάνισης καὶ ἄλλων, ὅπως π.χ: I have seen his *latest* book. (Εἶδα τὸ τελευταῖο του βιβλίου). (μελλοντικῶς δὲν αποκλείεται νὰ μὴ εἶναι τὸ τελευταῖον). I have just received the *latest* news about the war. (Μόλις ἔλαβα τὰ τελευταῖα νέα γιὰ τὸν πόλεμο). Bernard Show's *last* words were: «I want to sleep». (Τὰ τελευταῖα λόγια τοῦ Μπέρναρ-Σῶ ἦσαν: «Θέλω νὰ κοιμηθῶ».

3. Ἐκ τῶν τύπων *older, oldest, elder* καὶ *eldest*, οἱ μὲν δύο πρῶτοι χρησιμοποιοῦνται ἐπὶ πραγμάτων, οἱ δὲ δύο τελευταῖοι ἐπὶ προσώπων. Ἐξαίρεσιν ἀποτελεῖ ὁ τύπος *older* ὁ ὁποῖος χρησιμοποιεῖται καὶ ἐπὶ προσώπων, ὅταν πρόκειται περὶ συγκρίσεως καὶ προηγείται τῆς λέξεως *than*.

Δ. Γιὰ τὴν σύγκρισιν τῶν ἐπιθέτων χρησιμοποιοῦμεν:

1. Στὸν θετικὸ βαθμὸ τὶς λέξεις *as... as*, ὅταν πρόκειται περὶ καταφατικῆς προτάσεως καὶ τὶς λέξεις *not so... as*, ὅταν πρόκειται περὶ ἀρνητικῆς προτάσεως, ὅπως π.χ: Peter is *as* tall *as* George.—This tree is *as* high *as* that house.—Peter is *not so* tall *as* George.—This tree is *not so* high *as* that house.

2. Στὸν συγκριτικὸ βαθμὸ τὶς λέξεις: *than, the... the, all the*, ὅπως π.χ: This book is better *than* that.—John is *older* (καὶ ὅχι: *elder*) *than* Peter.—*The* more he has, *the* more he wants.—*the* more *the* better.—*the* bigger the price *the* better the goods.

3. Στὸν ὑπερθετικὸ βαθμὸ τὴν λέξιν *of* ἢ *in*. Πρὸ τοῦ ὑπερθετικοῦ βαθμοῦ τοῦ ἐπιθέτου χρησιμοποιεῖται πάντοτε τὸ ἄρθρον *the*. Π.χ. He is the *oldest of* them all.—New York is the biggest city *in* the world.—William is the tallest boy *in* the school.

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ II.

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΟΥ ΟΥΣΙΑΣΤΙΚΟΥ ΚΑΙ ΤΟΥ ΕΠΙΘΕΤΟΥ

A. Give the plural of the following nouns. (Νὰ δοθῇ ὁ πληθυντικός ἀριθμὸς τῶν ἐπομένων οὐσιαστικῶν).

α) 1. ass. 2. box. 3. brush. 4. branch. 5. coach. 6. church. 7. fish. 8. fox. 9. hero. 10. horse. 11. inch. 12. maid. 13. negro. 14. volcano. 15. wish. 16. man-eater. 17. vice-president. 18. strike-breaker. 19. self-sacrifice. 20. book-lover.

β) 1. beauty. 2. city. 3. delay. 4. day. 5. duty. 6. fly. 7. jolly. 8. knife. 9. lady. 10. life. 11. shelf. 12. toy. 13. tray. 14. valley. 15. fig-tree. 16. spinning-wheel. 17. saddle-bag. 18. chick-pen. 19. half-column. 20. vine-grower.

γ) 1. brother. 2. chief. 3. die. 4. envy. 5. grief. 6. genius. 7. index. 8. oasis. 9. louse. 10. monarch. 11. radius. 12. sheep. 13. analysis. 14. appendix. 15. automaton. 16. axis. 17. calculus. 18. ellipsis. 19. emphasis. 20. javelin-thrower. 21. cock-fight. 22. half-sheet. 22. time-table. 23. field mouse. 25. carriage-road.

B. Give the opposite gender of the following nouns. (Νὰ δοθῇ τὸ ἀντίθετον γένος τῶν ἐπομένων οὐσιαστικῶν).

α) 1. actor. 2. bachelor. 3. boy. 4. cock. 5. gander. 6. horse. 7. hero. 8. host. 9. master. 10. nephew. 11. stag. 12. man-servant. 13. testator. 14. uncle. 15. viscount.

β) 1. beau. 2. boar. 3. baron. 4. benefactor. 5. count. 6.

conductor. 7. drake. 8. director. 9. earl. 10. elector. 11. educator. 12. gentleman. 13. heir. 14. hunter. 15. heritor.

γ) 1. bride. 2. cow. 3. hen-sparrow. 4. madam. 5. hostess. 6. empress. 7. governess. 8. protectress. 9. heritrix. 10. daughter. 11. jewess. 12. bitch. 13. nun. 14. doe. 15. executrix.

Γ. *Give the possessive case of the following nouns.* (Νὰ δοθῇ ἡ γενικὴ πτῶσις τῶν ἐπομένων οὐσιαστικῶν).

1. father. 2. window. 3. chickens. 4. John. 4. king. 6. book. 7. earth. 8. rivers. 9. Napoleon. 10. sum. 11. knowledge. 12. people. 13. horses. 14. son. 15. parents. 16. baby. 17. books. 18. summer. 19. God. 20. Peter. 21. men. 22. towns. 23. temple. 24. Solomon. 25. lady.

Δ. *Translate the following phrases into English.* (Αἱ ἐπόμενες φράσεις νὰ μεταφραστοῦν στὴν Ἀγγλική).

α) 1. τὸ καπέλλο τοῦ Γιάννη. 2. ἡ κορυφή τοῦ Ὀλύμπου. 3. ἡ μᾶλα τῶν ἀγοριῶν. 4. τὸ ἄλογο τοῦ στρατηγοῦ. 5. τὰ καπέλλα τῶν γυναικῶν. 6. ὁ λαὸς τοῦ Ἰσραήλ. 7. τὰ βάσανα τῆς ζωῆς. 8. ἡ μητέρα τῶν παιδιῶν. 9. ἡ γυναῖκα τοῦ Γιώργου. 10. τὸ αὐγὸ τῆς κόττας. 11. ἡ ἀταξία τοῦ μαθητοῦ. 12. τὰ θρανία τοῦ σχολείου. 13. ἡ στέγη τοῦ σπιτιοῦ. 14. τὰ πόδια τοῦ τραπεζιοῦ. 15. τὰ παιδιά τοῦ Πέτρου.

β) 1. τοῦ ἔδωσα τὸ βιβλίον τοῦ Γιάννη. 2. Μοῦ ἔστειλε τὸ καπέλλο. 3. Δὲν ἔγραψεν ἀκόμα στὴ μητέρα. 4. Συνώδευσα τὴν ἀδελφήν του στὸ σπίτι τῆς μητέρας της. 5. Μοῦ τηλεφώνησε νὰ πάω στὸ γραφεῖο τοῦ ἐξαδέλφου του. 6. Τοὺς γράψαμε νὰ μᾶς περιμένουν. 7. Στείλε τὸ βιβλίον στὸν ἀδελφὸ τοῦ φίλου σου. 8. Μᾶς διηγεῖται τὶς περιπέτειες τοῦ πλοίου. 9. Μοῦ ἔστειλε μὴ φωτογραφία τῶν παιδιῶν τῆς ἀδελφῆς του. 10. Τοῦ ἔστειλα μερικὰ ἄνθη τοῦ κήπου μου. 11. Τοῦ τὸ ἔδωσα. 12. Μοῦ τὸ ἐπέστρεψε.

E. Give a noun to which each of the following adjectives might suitably be applied. (Νὰ δοθῇ οὐσιαστικὸ στὸ ὁποῖο νὰ ταιριάζῃ καθένα ἀπὸ τὰ ἐπόμενα ἐπίθετα).

1. assertive. 2. backward. 3. basic. 4. carnal. 5. damnable. 6. elementary. 7. faint. 8. authentic. 9. bare. 10. daily. 11. effective. 12. fabulous. 13. imminent. 14. laborious. 15. mannish. 16. naked. 17. occasional. 18. passionate. 19. awkward. 20. brisk. 21. current. 22. durable. 23. fertile. 24. grotesque. 25. irreligious.

ΣΤ. Give adjectives derived from the following nouns. (Νὰ δοθοῦν ἐπίθετα προερχόμενα ἀπὸ τὰ ἐπόμενα οὐσιαστικά).

1. advantage. 2. beast. 3. chill. 4. despair. 5. devil. 6. element. 7. fever. 8. fog. 9. girl. 10. horticulture. 11. idiom. 12. logic. 13. marvel. 14. nonsense. 15. number. 16. ornament. 17. panorama. 18. region. 19. sand. 20. satire. 21. torrent. 22. taint. 23. voice. 24. water. 25. wealth.

Z. Put the adjectives in the following sentences into positive and comparative degree. (Αἱ ἐπόμενες προτάσεις νὰ γραφοῦν μὲ τὰ ἐντὸς παρενθέσεως ἐπίθετα: α) στὸν θετικὸν βαθμόν, καὶ β) στὸν συγκριτικὸν βαθμόν).

1. His daughter is... (*beautiful*)... my sister. 2. I think this exercise is... (*easy*)... the last one. 3. The climate of our town is... (*pleasant*)... that of yours. 4. My brother's car is... (*expensive*)... mine. 5. The weather today is... (*warm*)... the weather last week. 5. This book is... (*interesting*)... that one. 6. This desk is... (*heavy*)... that table. 7. I think that this exercise is... (*difficult*)... the last one. 8. The climate of our town is... (*pleasant*)... that of yours. 9. This street is... (*wide*)... Patisson street. 10. Your son is... (*clever*)... his friend. 11. This anecdote is... (*funny*)... the last one we learned. 12. This cloth is... (*good*)... that one.

ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΝ ΤΕΤΑΡΤΟΝ

THE PRONOUN — Η ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΑ

Ἄντωνυμία εἶναι λέξις ἡ ὁποία χρησιμοποιεῖται ἀντὶ οὐσιαστικοῦ, προκειμένου ν' ἀποφευχθῇ ἡ συχνὴ ἐπανάληψις σὲ μία πρότασι μιᾶς καὶ τῆς αὐτῆς λέξεως.

I. KINDS OF PRONOUNS. (Εἶδη ἀντωνυμιῶν).

Τὰ εἶδη ἀντωνυμιῶν εἶναι τὰ ἑξῆς :

- A. *Personal Pronouns*. (Προσωπικῆς).
- B. *Possessive Pronouns*. (Κτητικῆς).
- Γ. *Demonstrative Pronouns*. (Δεικτικῆς).
- Δ. *Relative Pronouns*. (Ἀναφορικῆς).
- E. *Reflexive Pronouns*. (Αὐτοπαθεῖς).
- ΣΤ. *Interrogative Pronouns*. (Ἑρωτηματικῆς).
- Z. *Distributive Pronouns*. (Διανεμητικῆς).
- H. *Indefinite Pronouns*. (Ἀόριστες).

A. *Personal Pronouns*. (Προσωπικῆς ἀντωνυμιῆς).

1. Αἱ προσωπικῆς ἀντωνυμιῆς χρησιμοποιοῦνται ἀντὶ οὐσιαστικοῦ ποὺ σημαίνει πρόσωπον, ἀπαντοῦν καὶ στὰ τρία πρόσωπα, καὶ εἶναι αἱ ἑξῆς : Πρῶτον πρόσωπον : I. Δεύτερον πρόσωπον : *thou*. Τρίτον πρόσωπον : *he, she, it*. Ἐκ τῶν τριῶν τύπων τοῦ τρίτου προσώπου τὸ *it*, ἅν καὶ δὲν μπορεῖ νὰ θεωρηθῇ ὡς προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία, ὅμως σὲ μερικῆς περιπτώσεως χρησιμοποιεῖται ἀντὶ προσώπου, ὅπως π.χ. : *It is I*. (Αὐτὸς εἶμαι ἐγώ).

2. Κλίσεις τῶν προσωπικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν.

Ἑ ν ι κ ὸ ς

	α'. πρόσ.	β'. πρόσ.	γ'. πρόσ.
Ὄνομ.	<i>I</i>	<i>thou</i>	<i>he, she, it</i>
Γενική	<i>mine</i>	<i>thine</i>	<i>his, hers, its</i>
Δοτική	<i>to me</i>	<i>to thee</i>	<i>to him, to her, to it</i>
Αἰτιατική	<i>me</i>	<i>thee</i>	<i>him, her, it</i>

Π λ η θ υ ν τ ι κ ὸ ς

Ὄνομ.	<i>we</i>	<i>you</i>	<i>they</i>
Γενική	<i>ours</i>	<i>yours</i>	<i>theirs</i>
Δοτική	<i>to us</i>	<i>to you</i>	<i>to them</i>
Αἰτιατική	<i>us</i>	<i>you</i>	<i>them</i>

3. Παρατηρήσεις:

α) Τὸ πρῶτο πρόσωπο τοῦ ἐνικοῦ *I* γράφεται πάντοτε μὲ κεφαλαῖο γράμμα.

β) Οἱ τύποι *thou, thee* καὶ *thine* τοῦ δευτέρου προσώπου τοῦ ἐνικοῦ χρησιμοποιοῦνται μόνον στὶς προσευχὰς καὶ τὴν ποίησι. Σήμερον στὸν γραπτὸ καὶ προφορικὸ λόγον χρησιμοποιοῦνται οἱ ἀντίστοιχοι τύποι τοῦ πληθυντικοῦ *you* καὶ *yours*.

γ) Μὲ τὴν ὀνομαστικὴν τῶν προσωπικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν *I, you, he, she, it, we, you, καὶ they* σχηματίζονται καὶ κλίνονται τὰ ῥήματα τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης σὲ ὅλους τοὺς χρόνους αὐτῶν.

δ) Ὅταν σὲ μιὰ πρότασι ὑπάρχουν δύο ἀντωνυμίες ὥς ἀντικείμενα, ἐκ τῶν ὁποίων ἡ μὲν μία ἀντικαθιστᾷ πρόσωπον, ἡ δὲ ἄλλη πράγματα, τότε, ἐὰν μὲν προηγεῖται τὸ ἔμψυχον ἀντικείμενον καὶ αἱ δύο ἀντωνυμίες θὰ χρησιμοποιηθοῦν σὲ πτῶσι αἰτιατικῇ, ἐὰν ὅμως προηγεῖται τὸ ἄψυχον ἀντικείμενον ἡ μὲν ἀντωνυμία τοῦ ἄψυχου θὰ χρησιμοποιηθῇ στὴν αἰτιατικῇ, ἡ δὲ τοῦ ἐμψύχου στὴν δοτικῇ. Π.χ. *He gave me it* (μοῦ τὸ ἔδωκε), ἐνῶ: *He gave it to me. I taught him it.* (Τοῦ τὸ δίδαξα), ἐνῶ: *I taught it to him.—We told them it.* (Τοὺς τὸ εἶπαμε), ἐνῶ: *We told it to them.*

B. *Possessive Pronouns.* (Κτητικὲς Ἀντωνυμίαι).

1. Κτητικὲς ἀντωνυμίαι εἶναι αἱ ἑξῆς :

	Ἑνικὸς	Πληθυντικὸς
α' πρός.	<i>mine</i>	<i>ours</i>
β' πρός.	<i>yours</i>	<i>yours</i>
γ! πρός.	<i>his</i>	<i>theirs</i>
	<i>hers</i>	
	<i>its</i>	

2. Παρατηρήσεις :

α) Ἡ κτητικὴ ἀντωνυμία *mine* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν ὁ κάτοχος εἶναι ἓνας οἰουδήποτε γένους, τὸ δὲ κτῆμα εἶναι οἰουδήποτε γένους καὶ ἀριθμοῦ, ὅπως π. χ. :

This book is *mine*. (Αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίον εἶναι δικό μου).

He is an old friend of *mine*. (Εἶναι ἓνας παλιὸς φίλος ἀπὸ τοὺς δικούς μου).

Those girls are *mine*. (Αὐτὰ ἐκεῖ τὰ κορίτσια εἶναι δικά μου).

β) Ἡ κτητικὴ ἀντωνυμία *his* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν ὁ κάτοχος εἶναι ἓνας, γένους ἀρσενικοῦ, τὸ δὲ κτῆμα οἰουδήποτε γένους καὶ ἀριθμοῦ, ὅπως π. χ. :

That book is *his*, not *mine*. (Αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίον εἶναι δικό του, ὄχι δικό μου).

Those books are *his*, not *mine*. (Αὐτὰ τὰ βιβλία εἶναι δικά του, ὄχι δικά μου).

The girl in the garden is *his*. (Τὸ κορίτσι πὺν βρίσκεται στὸν κήπον εἶναι δικό του).

The girls in the garden is *his*. (Τὰ κορίτσια πὺν εἶναι στὸν κήπον εἶναι δικά του).

γ) Ἡ κτητικὴ ἀντωνυμία *hers* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν ὁ κάτοχος εἶναι ἓνας, γένους θηλυκοῦ, τὸ δὲ κτῆμα οἰουδήποτε ἀριθμοῦ καὶ γένους, ὅπως π. χ. :

Is that *his* or *hers*? (Αὐτό εἶναι δικό του ἢ δικό της ;).

She says that the dog near the door is *hers*. (Λέγει πὺς ὁ σκύλος πὺν εἶναι σιμά στὴν πόρτα εἶναι δικός της).

I think that these books are *hers*. (Νομίζω πὼς αὐτὰ ἐδῶ τὰ βιβλία εἶναι **δικὰ της**).

δ) Ὁ πληθυντικὸς τῶν κτητικῶν ἀντωνυμιῶν *ours, yours, theirs* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν οἱ κάτοχοι εἶναι πολλοὶ οἰουδήποτε γένους, τὸ δὲ κτῆμα οἰουδήποτε γένους καὶ ἀριθμοῦ, ὅπως π. χ. :

This house is *ours*. (Αὐτὸ τὸ σπίτι εἶναι **δικό μας**).

Those houses are *ours*. (Αὐτά τὰ σπίτια εἶναι **δικὰ μας**).

This stick is not *yours*. (Αὐτὸ τὸ μαστοῦνι δὲν εἶναι **δικό σας**).

These books are not *yours*. (Αὐτὰ τὰ βιβλία δὲν εἶναι **δικὰ σας**).

Our school is older than *theirs*. (Τὸ σχολεῖο μας εἶναι πλεονεκτικὸν παρὰ τὸ **δικό τους**).

These children are *theirs*. (Αὐτὰ τὰ παιδιά εἶναι **δικὰ των**).

Γ. *Demonstrative Pronouns*. (Δεικτικαὲς ἀντωνυμίαι).

1. Δεικτικαὲς ἀντωνυμίαι εἶναι αἱ ἑξῆς :

α) *this* (ἐνικ.)—*these* (πληθυντ.)

β) *that* (ἐνικ.)—*those* (πληθυντ.)

β) *the former*

γ) *the latter*.

Ἐκ τῶν δύο ἀντωνυμιῶν «*the former*» καὶ «*the latter*», ἡ μὲν πρώτη σημαίνει τὸ πρῶτον ἀπὸ τὰ δύο πρόσωπα, ζῶν ἢ πράγματα, ἡ δὲ δευτέρα τὸ δεύτερον ἀπὸ δύο πρόσωπα, ζῶν ἢ πράγματα.

Παραδείγματα :

This is the better of the two. (Αὐτὸ ἐδῶ εἶναι τὸ καλύτερον ἀπὸ τὰ δύο).

I have heard *this* already. (Τὸ ἔχω ἀκούσει ἤδη **αὐτό**).

I don't like *this* one; I will take that (those). (Δεν μ' ἀρέσει **αὐτό** ἐδῶ. Θὰ πάρω **αὐτό** (αὐτὰ) ἐκεῖ).

Of the two books, I prefer *the former*. (Απὸ τὰ δύο βιβλία προτιμῶ τὸ πρῶτον).

Of these two men *the former* is dead and *the latter* still alive. (Ἐκ τῶν δύο ἀνδρῶν ὁ **πρῶτος** πέθανε, καὶ ὁ **δεύτερος** ζεῖ ἀκόμη).

Δ. *Relative Pronouns*. (Ἀναφορικές Ἀντωνυμίες).

1. Ἀναφορικές ἀντωνυμίες εἶναι αἱ ἑξῆς :

α) *who* (γεν. *whose*, αἰτ. *whom*).

β) *which*, γ) *that* καὶ δ) *what*.

2. Ἡ ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *who* χρησιμοποιεῖται μόνον γιὰ πρόσωπα, ὅπως π.χ :

α) The man *who* spoke was my brother. (Ὁ ἄνθρωπος ὁ ὁποῖος μίλησε ἦταν ὁ ἀδελφός μου).

β) The man *whom* you saw was my father. (Ὁ ἄνθρωπος τὸν ὁποῖον εἶδατε ἦταν ὁ πατέρας μου).

γ) He is a writer *whose* books I like. (Εἶναι συγγραφεὺς τοῦ ὁποῖου τὰ βιβλία μ' ἀρέσουν).

δ) The man *of whom* I spoke was my friend. (Ὁ ἄνθρωπος γιὰ τὸν ὁποῖον μίλησα ἦταν φίλος μου).

3. Ἡ ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *which* χρησιμοποιεῖται μόνον γιὰ ζῶα, πράγματα, καὶ ἀφηρημένες ἔννοιες, ὅπως π.χ.

α) The house *which* I bought is very nice. (Τὸ σπίτι τὸ ὁποῖον ἀγόρασα εἶναι πολὺ ὠραῖο).

β) I have a dog *which* is very good. (Ἔχω ἕνα σκύλο ὁ ὁποῖος εἶναι πολὺ καλός).

γ) The book *of which* he spoke is mine. (Τὸ βιβλίο γιὰ τὸ ὁποῖο μίλησε εἶναι δικό μου).

δ) It is a habit *which* I have never been able to get out of. (Εἶναι μιὰ συνήθεια τὴν ὁποῖαν δὲν μπόρεσα ποτὲ ν' ἀποβάλω).

Παρατηρήσεις :

α) Κατ' ἐξάφρσιν ἡ ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *which* ἀναφέρεται σὲ πρόσωπο στὴ φράσι :

Our Father *which* art in heaven. (Πάτερ ἡμῶν ὁ ἐν τοῖς Οὐρανοῖς).

β) Πολλάκις ἡ ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *which* ἀναφέρεται σὲ ὁλόκληρη πρότασι, ὅπως π.χ :

The teacher gave the students a holiday, *which* pleased them very much.

γ) Ἡ ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *which* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης ὅταν ἀναφέρεται σὲ περιληπτικὸν οὐσιαστικὸν (ποὺ σημαίνει ὁμάδα προσώπων) καὶ μόνον ἐφ' ὅσον οἱ ἀποτελοῦντες τὴν ὁμάδα λαμβάνονται ὡς ἓν σύνολον. Στὴν περίπτωσιν αὕτῃ τὸ ῥῆμα τῆς προτάσεως εἶναι ἐνικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ὅπως π.χ.:

This is the team, *which* came from Italy. (Αὕτῃ εἶναι ἡ ὁμάς **ἡ ὁποία** ἦλθεν ἀπὸ τὴν Ἰταλία).

Ὅταν ὅμως ἀναφερόμεθα εἰς τὰ ἄτομα τῆς ὁμάδος τότε χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴν ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *who* μὲ τὸ ῥῆμα τῆς προτάσεως σὲ πληθυντικὸ ἀριθμὸν, ὅπως π.χ.:

The team *who* are having their dinner will leave to-morrow (Τὰ μέλη τῆς ὁμάδος **τὰ ὁποία** παίρνουν τὸ δεῖπνο τῶν θ' ἀναχωρήσουν αὔριο).

4. Ἡ ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *that* χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ πρόσωπα, ζῶα ἢ πράγματα, ὅπως π.χ.:

α) This is the boy *that* I told you about. (Αὐτὸ εἶναι τὸ ἀγόρι γιὰ **τὸ ὁποῖο** σὰς μίλησα).

β) I bought a dog *that* is very good. (Ἀγόρασα ἕνα σκυλί, **τὸ ὁποῖον** εἶναι πολὺ καλόν).

γ) The book *that* you lent me... (Τὸ βιβλίον **τὸ ὁποῖον** μοῦ δανείσατε...).

Ἡ ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *that* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης, ὅταν ἀναφέρεται σὲ δυὸ οὐσιαστικά ἐκ τῶν ὁποίων τὸ ἕνα εἶναι πρόσωπο καὶ τὸ ἄλλο ζῶο ἢ πρᾶγμα, ὅπως π.χ. :

They spoke about the people and the places *that* they had seen. (Μίλησαν γιὰ λαοὺς καὶ μέρη **τὰ ὁποία** εἶχαν ἰδῆ).

Παρατήρησις:

Αἱ ἀναφορικὲς ἀντωνυμίαι, ὅταν χρησιμοποιοῦνται σὲ πτώσιν αἰτιατική, μποροῦν νὰ παραλειποῦν, ὅπως π.χ.:

α) The man *whom* we met (ἢ The man we met) is a teacher.

β) This book *which* I bought to-day (ἢ: This book I bought) is very interesting.

δ) Is that the book *that* you lent me? (ἢ: Is that the book you lent me?)

5. Ἡ ἀναφορική ἀντωνυμία *what* χρησιμοποιεῖται ὅταν ἀναφέ-
σῃ οὐσιαστικὸν τὸ ὁποῖον ὑπονοεῖται, ὅπως π. χ. :

α) Tell me *what* you heard. (Πέστε μου **ἐκεῖνο** ποὺ ἀκού-
σατε).

β) I told you *what* I want. (Σᾶς εἶπα **ἐκεῖνο** ποὺ θέλω).

γ) Tell me *what* you want to know. (Πέστε μου **ἐκεῖνο** ποὺ
θέλετε νὰ μάθετε).

δ) I don't know *what* happened. (Δὲν ξέρω **ἐκεῖνο** ποὺ συ-
νέβη).

E. *Reflexive Pronouns*. (Αὐτοπαθεῖς Ἀντωνυμίαι).

1. Αὐτοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίαι εἶναι αἱ ἑξῆς :

	Ἑνικὸς	Πληθυντικὸς
α'. πρὸς.	<i>myself</i>	<i>ourselves</i>
β'. »	<i>yourself</i>	<i>yourselves</i>
γ'. »	<i>himself</i> <i>herself</i> <i>itself</i> <i>oneself</i>	<i>themselves</i>

2. Αἱ αὐτοπαθεῖς ἀντωνυμίαι *myself*, *yourself*, *ourselves* καὶ
yourselves χρησιμοποιοῦνται καὶ γιὰ τὰ τρία γένη. Ἡ ἀντωνυμία
himself χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ τὸ ἀρσενικὸν γένος, ἡ *herself* γιὰ τὸ θη-
λυκόν, ἡ *itself* γιὰ τὸ οὐδέτερον καὶ ἡ *oneself* γιὰ πρόσωπα οἰουδή-
ποτε γένους, ὅπως π.χ. :

α) I have hurt *myself*. (Κτυπήθηκα).

β) We shall help *ourselves* first, if you don't mind. (Θὰ
σερβιρισθοῦμε πρῶτοι, ἂν δὲν σᾶς πειράξει).

γ) You may congratulate *yourself*. (Μπορεῖτε νὰ συγχαρῆτε
τὸν ἑαυτὸν σας).

δ) You have made yourselves contemptible. (Καταντήσαμε ἀ-
ξιοπεριφρόνητοι).

ε) They washed themselves (Πλήθυναν).

στ) He hides (himself). (Κρύβεται).

ζ) It is an umbrella that opens and shuts *itself*. (Εἶναι ὁμ-
πρέλλα ποὺ ἀνοίγοκλείνει μόνη της).

στ) One must dress *oneself* carefully. (Πρέπει να ντύνεται κανείς προσεκτικά).

3. Αἱ αὐτὲς ἀντωνυμίες *myself, yourself*, κλπ. χρησιμοποιοῦνται προκειμένου νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν ἑμφασιν, ὅποτε θεωροῦνται ὡς **ἐμφαντικὲς ἀντωνυμίες**, ὅπως π.χ. :

α) I can do that work *myself*. (Μπορῶ νὰ κάνω αὐτὴ τὴ δουλειὰ **μόνος μου**).

β) Did you see him *yourself*. (Τὸν εἶδατε **σεῖς ὁ ἴδιος** ;).

γ) She did it *herself*. (Τὸ ἔκανε **μόνη της**).

4. Αἱ ἀντωνυμίες *myself, yourself*, κλπ., χρησιμοποιούμενες μετὰ τὴν πρόθεσι *by*, ἔχουν τὴν σημασίαν τοῦ *alone* (μόνος) καὶ τίθενται στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως, ὅπως π.χ. :

α) I did it *by myself*. (Τὸ ἔκανα **μόνος μου**).

β) You will be left *by yourself*. (Θὰ μένετε **μόνος σας**).

γ) He will go to the Minister *by himself*. (Θὰ πάη στὸν ὑπουργὸν **μόνος του**).

δ) An automatic machine is one that works *by itself*. (Αὐτόματος μηχανὴ εἶναι μιὰ ποὺ ἐργάζεται **μόνη της**).

ΣΤ. *Interrogative Pronouns*. (Ἑρωτηματικὲς Ἀντωνυμίες).

1. Ἑρωτηματικὲς ἀντωνυμίες εἶναι αἱ : *who* (**whose? whom?**), **which?** καὶ **what?**

2. Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ ἀντωνυμία *who* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἀποκλειστικῶς γιὰ πρόσωπα, ὅπως π.χ. :

α) *Who* came this morning? (Ποιὸς ἦλθε σήμερον τὸ πρωῒ;)

β) To *whom* did you send it? (Σὲ ποιὸν τὸ στέλλετε;)

γ) *Whom* do you take me for? (Γιὰ ποιὸν με παίρνετε;)

3. Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ ἀντωνυμία *what?* χρησιμοποιεῖται κυρίως προκειμένου γιὰ πράγματα καὶ με ἐντελῶς ἀόριστον ἔννοιαν, ὅπως π.χ. :

α) *What* are you thinking of? (Γιὰ **τί** σκέπτεσθε;)

β) *What* is his name? (Ποιὸ εἶναι τὸ ὄνομά του;)

γ) *What* happened then? (Τὶ συνέβη λοιπόν;)

4. Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ ἀντωνυμία *which* χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ πρό-

σωπα, ζῶα καὶ πράγματα, ὅταν ἀπὸ μιᾶ ὁρισμένη ομάδα αὐτῶν θέλομεν νὰ ξεχωρίσωμεν ἓνα ἢ περισσότερα, ὅπως π.χ. :

α) *Which* of these men did you see first? (Ποιὸν ἀπὸ αὐτοὺς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους εἶδατε πρῶτον;)

β) Which of these books will you have? (Ποιὸ ἀπὸ αὐτὰ τὰ βιβλία θέλετε;)

γ) *Which* of you will go with me? (Ποιὸς ἀπὸ σᾶς θέλει νὰ πάη μαζί μου;)

Z. Distributive Pronouns. (Διανεμητικὲς Ἀντωνυμίαι).

1. Διανεμητικὲς ἀντωνυμίαι εἶναι αἱ λέξεις *each*, *either* καὶ *neither*, αἱ ὁποῖες χρησιμοποιοῦνται καὶ ὡς διανεμητικὰ ἐπίθετα.

2. Ἡ διανεμητικὴ ἀντωνυμία *each* χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ ἓνα ἀπὸ δύο ἢ περισσότερα πρόσωπα ἢ πράγματα, ὅπως π.χ.:

α) The teacher gave two books to *each* of the boys. (Ὁ καθηγητὴς ἔδωσε δύο βιβλία **στὸ καθένα** ἀγόρι).

β) *Each* of them wanted to try. (**Καθένας** ἀπὸ αὐτοὺς ἠθέλε νὰ δοκιμάσῃ).

γ) Each of these chairs costs fifty drachmas. (Καθένα ἀπὸ αὐτὰ ἔδω τὰ καθίσματα στοιχίζει 50 δραχμές).

3) Ἡ διανεμητικὴ ἀντωνυμία *either* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν σημασίαν «ὁ ἓνας ἢ ὁ ἄλλος ἐκ τῶν δύο» ἢ «τὸ ἓνα ἢ τὸ ἄλλο ἐκ τῶν δύο» ὅπως π.χ.:

α) I don't think that *either* of these two students is clever. (Νομίζω ὅτι κανένας ἀπὸ τοὺς δυὸ αὐτοὺς μαθητὰς εἶναι ἔξυπνος).

β) You may go by *either* road. (Μπορεῖτε νὰ πάτε **ἀπὸ τὸν ἓνα ἢ τὸν ἄλλον** δρόμον).

γ) There are shops on *either* side. (Ὑπάρχουν καταστήματα καὶ **στὴ μιὰ καὶ στὴν ἄλλη** πλευρὰ τοῦ δρόμου). (καὶ στὶς δυὸ πλευρὰς).

3. Ἡ διανεμητικὴ ἀντωνυμία *neither* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν σημασίαν «Κανεὶς ἐκ τῶν δύο» ἢ «κανέν ἐκ τῶν δύο», ὅπως π.χ.:

α) *Neither* of my sons wants to learn French. (Κανεὶς ἀπὸ τοὺς δυὸ γιουὺς μου θέλει νὰ μάθῃ Γαλλικὰ).

β) I have two grammar books, but *neither* explains the grammar clearly. (Έχω δυο γραμματικές, αλλά καμία από τις δυο δεν εξηγεί σαφώς τη γραμματική).

H. Indefinite Pronouns. (Αόριστες αντωνυμίες).

1. Αόριστες αντωνυμίες είναι αι λέξεις *some, any, somebody (someone), something, anybody (anyone), anything, everybody (everyone), everything, all, one*, κλπ.

2. Αι αόριστες αντωνυμίες *some* και *any* ακολουθούν τους αὐτούς κανόνες χρησιμοποίησής των τους οποίους και τὰ αντίστοιχα αόριστα επίθετα *some* και *any* (σελ. 26-27), ὅπως π.χ:

I want *some* paper. Please, give me *some*.

There is no ink in the inkpot. Have you *any*?

Did you receive many letters? I did not receive *any*.

3. Αι αόριστες αντωνυμίες *somebody (someone), something, anybody (anyone)* και *anything* ακολουθούν επίσης τους αὐτούς κανόνες χρησιμοποίησής, τους οποίους και τὰ αντίστοιχα αόριστα επίθετα *some* και *any*, ὅπως π.χ:

There's *somebody (someone)* at the door.

There's *something* I want to show you.

Is there *anybody (anyone)* in the house?

I don't see *anybody (anyone)*.

Is there *anything* more beautiful?

He will never do *anything*.

4. Αι αόριστες αντωνυμίες *everybody (everyone)* και *everything* χρησιμοποιούνται τόσοι καταφατικές ὅσον και σὲ ἀρνητικές και ἐρωτηματικές προτάσεις, ὅπως π.χ:

Everybody (everyone) who comes here admires the scenery. (Καθένας πὺν ἔρχεται ἐδῶ θαυμάζει τὴ θέα).

Not *everybody (everyone)* can hear; some people are deaf. (Ὅλοι οἱ ἄνθρωποι δὲν ἀκούουν· μερικοὶ εἶναι κουφοί).

He thinks he knows *everything*. (Νομίζει πὺς τὰ ξέρει ὅλα).

Wealth is not *everything*. (Ὁ πλοῦτος δὲν εἶναι τὸ πᾶν).

Is *everything* on the table? (Εἶναι ὅλα στὸ τραπέζι ;).

5. Ἡ λέξις *all* χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς ἀόριστη ἀντωνυμία σὲ πρότασι τῆς ὁποίας τὸ ῥῆμα εἶναι ἐνικοῦ ἢ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ, ὅπως π.χ.:

All are in the garden. ("Ολοὶ εἶναι στὸν κήπο).

We can eat now; all is ready. (Μποροῦμε νὰ φάμε τώρα ὅλα εἶναι ἑτοιμα).

6. Ἡ λέξις *one* χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς ἀόριστη ἀντωνυμία, στὸν ἐνικό, ἢ πληθυντικό ἀριθμόν, ἀντὶ οὐσιαστικοῦ ποῦ ἐπιδέχεται μέτρησην (ὅπως π.χ. εἶναι τὰ οὐσιαστικά *tree, hat, person*, κλπ. π.χ.:

I don't like this hat. Can you show me a better one? (Δὲν μ' ἀρεσεὶ αὐτὸ τὸ καπέλλο. Μπορεῖτε νὰ μοῦ δείξετε ἕνα καλύτερο;)

Do you want this one or that one? (Θέλετε αὐτὸ ἐδῶ ἢ αὐτὸ ἐκεῖ;).

I want large ones, not small ones. (Θέλω μεγάλα, ὄχι μικρά).

Ἡ αὐτὴ λέξις *one* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἀπροσώπως ὡς ἀόριστη ἀντωνυμία, ὅταν πρόκειται νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν μιὰ γενικὴ ἀλήθεια ἢ δοξασία ὅπως π.χ.:

One can never believe the newspapers. (Δὲν μπορεῖ κανεὶς νὰ πιστέψῃ ποτὲ τὶς ἐφημερίδες).

If one wants a thing done, one had best do it oneself. ("Εὰν κανεὶς θέλει νὰ γίνῃ κάτι, καλύτερα νὰ τὸ κάνῃ μόνος του).

Μερικὲς φορὲς ἀντὶ τῆς ἀορίστου ἀντωνυμίας *one* χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴ λέξι *they*, ὡς ἀόριστη ἐπίσης ἀντωνυμία καὶ μὲ ἀόριστη ἔννοια, ὅπως π.χ. *They say that the journey to the moon will take place soon.* (Λέγουν πῶς τὸ ταξίδι στὸ φεγγάρι θὰ πραγματοποιηθῇ σύντομα).

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ III

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΗΣ ΑΝΤΩΝΥΜΙΑΣ

A. Supply who, whom, whose, that, what, or which in the following sentences. (Τὰ κενὰ τῶν ἐπομένων προτάσεων νὰ συμπληρωθοῦν μὲ μίαν ἀπὸ τὶς ἀντωνυμίες **who, whom, whose, that ἢ which**).

1. ... of these two men did you see first? 2. Are these books ... you ordered? 4. This is the man ... told me of it. 4. Το ... did you send it? 5. There is a chair ... back is broken. 6. The girl ... you saw is my daughter. 7. This is the finest picture ... I have ever seen. 8. She was in her garden, the gate of ... had been left open. 9. All the passengers ... were injured have received compensation. 10. ... do you take me for? 11. I know ... said it. 12. The house ... stood on high ground, commanded a fine view. 13. Is that the book ... you lent me? 14. ... happened then is not related. 15. That is not ... you mean. 16. There are not many cities ... have such an enjoyable climate as that of Athens. 17. The ship ~~son~~ ... he came to this country was the «Queen Mary». 18. I want to know ... you are going to do tonight. 19. I will do anything ... he asks me to do. 20. He is the kind of worker ... everybody thinks is able. 21. ... did you find at the office? 22. Give it to the clerk ...you spoke to previously. 23. ... this country needs is great leaders. 24. That is the book of ... he spoke. 25. I am speaking about my friend ... death you must have heard of.

B. Supply *some*, *any*, or *one* in the following sentences.
(Τὰ κενὰ τῶν ἐπομένων προτάσεων νὰ συμπληρωθοῦν μὲ μιὰ ἀπὸ
τὶς ἀντωνυμίες *some*, *any*, ἢ *one*).

1... of the boys were early and... of them were late. 2. If
you have no money I will give you... 3. I have no matches
about me, have you got...? 4. This plate is dirty, give me a
clean... 5. I should like to have a house but I can't afford to
buy... 6... of them were dead already. 7. I don't see... that
might suit. 8. Have you... sugar? If so, would you
mind giving me... 9. I doubt whether there are... of the
kind you want. 10. Is there... bread left or has it all gone?
11. Will you lend me a book, please... book will do 12.
Have you seen his horse? he has a very fine... 13. May I have...
of this cake? 14. You may take... of these books that interests
you.

Γ. Choose the correct word from the pairs of words in
brackets. (Διαλέξατε τὴν ὀρθὴ λέξι ἐκ τῶν δύο λέξεων ποὺ βρίσκον-
ται ἐντὸς παρενθέσεως).

1. There is (somebody, anybody) at the door. 2. There
isn't (something, anything) in that box. 3. Have you got
(something, anything) for me? 4. There is (something, anything)
I want to show you. 5. Ask (somebody, anybody) else. 6. I
don't see (somebody, anybody). 6. Is there (something, anything)
more beautiful? 7. (Somebody, Anybody) else ought to do it. 8.
He thinks he is (somebody, anybody). 9. Ask me (something,
anything) easier. 10. It is (something, anything) to have
reached home without an accident. 11. He will never do (some-
thing, anything). 12. Have you heard (something, anything) of
him lately? 13. He [thought he was (somebody, anybody). 14.
He gave me (something, anything) for you.

Δ. Translate into English,

α) 1. Αυτό τὸ σπίτι εἶναι δικό μου. 2. Αὐτὰ τὰ βιβλία εἶναι δικά σας ἢ δικά μου; 3. Τοῦ δάνεισα ἓνα βιβλίο ἀπὸ τὰ δικά σας. 4. Αὐτὰ δὲν εἶναι δικά μου, εἶναι δικά του. 5. Εἶμαι ἓνας φίλος ἀπὸ τοὺς δικούς του. 6. Εἶμαι βέβαιος πὼς αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο εἶναι δικό της. 7. Αὐτὸ τὸ οἰκόπεδο εἶναι δικό μας. 8. Τὸ σχολεῖο μας εἶναι πιὸ παλὸ ἀπὸ τὸ δικό τους. 9. Εἶδα ἔπολλά σπίτια, ὅμως αὐτὸ δὲν τὸ εἶδα. 10. Δὲν ξέρω ποιὸς τὸ εἶπε.

β) 1. Τὸ ἔκανα ἐγὼ ὁ ἴδιος. 2. Αὐτὸ δὲν μπορούσα νὰ τὸ κάνω ἐγὼ ὁ ἴδιος. 3. Τὸν εἶδατε σεῖς ὁ ἴδιος; 4. Μπορεῖτε νὰ συγχαρῆτε τὸν ἑαυτό σας. 5. Τελειώστε το μόνος σας. 6. Χτυπήθηκε μόνη της. 7. Ἐπρεπε νὰ ντρέπεται γιὰ τὸν ἑαυτό της. 8. Μοῦ εἶπε τὰ νέα ἢ ἴδια. 9. Ὁ ἀδελφός του κόπηκε μὲ τὸ μαχαίρι. 10. Αὐτὴ ἡ μηχανὴ λειτουργεῖ μόνη της.

γ) 1. Πῆρε ὁ καθένας ἀπὸ πεντῆντα δραχμές. 2. Κανένας ἀπὸ αὐτοὺς τοὺς δυὸ δὲν ἦλθε. 3. Ἡ μητέρα ἔδωσε δυὸ μῆλα στὸ καθενα παιδί. 4. Μπορεῖτε νὰ πᾶτε ἀπὸ τὸν ἓνα ἢ ἀπὸ τὸν ἄλλο δρόμο. 5. Τσακωθῆκαν μεταξύ τους. 6. Κανένα ἀπὸ αὐτὰ τὰ δυὸ βιβλία μοῦ εἶναι ὠφέλιμο. 7. Ὁ γυιός σας δὲν μπόρεσε ν' ἀπαντήσῃ σὲ καμιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς δυὸ ἐρωτήσεις. 8. Καθένα ἀπὸ τὰ δυὸ βιβλία κόστισε 10 δραχμές. 9. Μπορεῖ κανένας ἀπὸ σᾶς τοὺς δυὸ νὰ μοῦ πῇ τὴν ὥρα; 10. Καμιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς ἀπαντήσεις δὲν ἦταν σωστή.

ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΝ ΠΕΜΠΤΟΝ

THE VERB - TO RHMA

I. VOICE. (ΦΩΝΗ ΤΟΥ ΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ)

Voice (Φωνή) εἶναι ἡ μορφή πού παίρνει τὸ ρῆμα προκειμένου νὰ δηλωθῇ ἡ σχέση τοῦ ὑποκειμένου ὡς πρὸς τὴν ἐνέργεια πού ἐκδηλοῦται ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα.

Αἱ *Voices* στὴν Ἀγγλική γλῶσσα εἶναι δύο :

1. *Active Voice*. (Ἑνεργητική φωνή), καί.

2. *Passive Voice*. (Παθητική φωνή).

Στὴν *Active Voice* τὸ ὑποκείμενο ἐκτελεῖ τὴν ἐνέργεια πού ἐκφράζεται ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα. Στὴν *Passive Voice* τὸ ὑποκείμενο ὑφίσταται τὴν ἐνέργεια πού ἐκφράζεται ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα.

II. MOODS. (ΕΓΚΛΗΣΕΙΣ)

Αἱ *Moods* (Ἑγκλίσεις) εἶναι κυρίως αἱ ἑξῆς τέσσαρες.

1. *Indicative*. (Ὁριστική). 2. *Subjunctive*. (ὑποτακτική). 3. *Imperative*. (Προστακτική) καὶ 4. *Infinitive*. (Ἀπαρέμφατον).

Ἡ *Participle* (Μετοχή) θεωρεῖται, καθὼς θὰ ἴδουμε, ὡς *Verbal adjective* (Ρηματικὸν ἐπίθετο) καὶ τὸ *Gerund* (Γερούνδιον) ὡς *Verbal noun*. (Ρηματικὸν οὐσιαστικόν).

III. TENSES. (ΧΡΟΝΟΙ ΤΟΥ ΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ)

A. Οἱ *Tenses* (Χρόνοι τοῦ ρήματος) εἶναι οἱ ἑξῆς ὀκτώ.

1. *Present*. 2. *Past*. 3. *Present Perfect*. 4. *Past Perfect*
5. *Future*. 6. *Future Perfect*. 7. *Future in the Past* (ἡ *Condi*

tional) και 8. *Future Perfect in the Past* (ἡ: Conditional Perfect).

Β. Κάθε *Tense* τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης ἔχει δυὸ τύπους: α) τὸν *Simple Tense* καὶ β) τὸν *Continuous Tense*. Ἐχομεν δηλαδὴ στὴν Ἀγγλικῇ γλώσσᾳ *Simple Present Tense*, καὶ *Continuous Present Tense*, *Simple Past Tense* καὶ *Continuous Past Tense*, κ.ο.κ.

IV. ΒΑΣΙΚΟΙ ΤΥΠΟΙ ΤΩΝ ΡΗΜΑΤΩΝ.

Βασικοὶ τύποι κάθε ρήματος τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης, ὁμαλοῦ ἢ ἀνωμαλίου, εἶναι οἱ ἑξῆς τρεῖς: α) *Infinitive*, β) *Simple Past Tense*, καὶ γ) *Past Participle*. Μὲ τοὺς τρεῖς αὐτοὺς τύπους καὶ τὰ *Auxiliary Verbs* (Βοηθητικὰ ρήματα) σχηματίζονται καὶ κλίνονται τὰ ρήματα τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης.

V. REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS.

(Ὅμαλὰ καὶ ἀνώμαλα ρήματα).

Ὁ διαχωρισμὸς τῶν ρημάτων τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς σὲ *regular verbs* καὶ *irregular verbs* ὀφείλεται στὸν διαφορετικὸ τρόπο κατὰ τὸν ὁποῖον σχηματίζονται οἱ δυὸ ἀπὸ τοὺς τρεῖς βασικοὺς τύπους κάθε ρήματος, ἥτοι ὁ *Simple Past* καὶ ἡ *Past Participle*. Διότι, καθὼς βὰ ἰδοῦμε σὲ ἄλλο κεφάλαιο, ἐνῶ ὁ *Simple Past* καὶ ἡ *Past Participle* τῶν *regular verbs* (ὁμαλῶν ρημάτων) σχηματίζονται μὲ τὴν προσθήκην τοῦ τέλους τοῦ *Infinitive* (Ἀπαρεμφάτου) αὐτῶν τῆς αὐτῆς καταλήξεως, ὁ σχηματισμὸς τῶν αὐτῶν χρόνων τῶν *irregular verbs* (ἀνωμαλίων ρημάτων) δὲν ἀκολουθεῖ κανόνα τινά. Καθένας ἀπὸ τοὺς δυὸ αὐτοὺς τύπους, ἔχει ὡς ἐπὶ τὸ πλεῖστον ξεχωριστὴ μορφή. Ὑπάρχουν ἑξ ἄλλου ἀνώμαλα ρήματα ποὺ ἔχουν τὴν αὐτὴ μορφή γιὰ τοὺς δυὸ ἢ καὶ τοὺς τρεῖς βασικοὺς τύπους.

IV. AUXILIARY VERBS.

(Βοηθητικὰ ρήματα).

Α. Τὰ *auxiliary verbs* τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης εἶναι τὰ ἑξῆς: 1. *to be* 2. *to have*. 3. *to do*. 4. *can*. 5. *may*. 6. *ought*. 7. *must*. 8. *shall* καὶ 9. *will*.

Ἀπὸ τὰ βοηθητικὰ αὐτὰ ρήματα τὰ τρία πρῶτα (*to be, to have* καὶ *to do*) χρησιμοποιοῦνται καὶ ὡς κύρια ρήματα μιᾶς προτάσεως, ἐνῶ τὰ ὑπόλοιπα εἶναι ἑλλιπτικά καὶ οὐδέποτε χρησιμοποιοῦνται μόνον τῶν ὡς κύρια ρήματα μιᾶς προτάσεως.

Β. Στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα γίνεται εὐρεῖα χρῆσις συντμημένων τύπων τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων. Αὐτὸ γίνεται στὴν **ἄρνητικὴ** καὶ στὴν **ἄρνητικο-ἐρωτηματικὴ** μορφῇ τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων. Αἱ συντμήσεις αὐτὲς χρησιμοποιοῦνται κυρίως στὸν προφορικὸ λόγο, ἥτοι στὴν συνομιλία. Στὸν γραπτὸ λόγο χρησιμοποιοῦνται ἐπίσης ἀλλὰ μόνο στὸν εὐθὺ λόγον.

ACTIVE VOICE - ΕΝΕΡΓΗΤΙΚΗ ΦΩΝΗ

I. INDICATIVE (ΟΡΙΣΤΙΚΗ)

A. PRESENT TENSE

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΛΙΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ PRESENT TENSE

SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE

1. **Καταφατικὴ μορφή.** α) Ἡ καταφατικὴ μορφή τοῦ Simple Present Tense τῶν ρημάτων, ὁμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων, σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται μὲ τὶς προσωπικὰς ἀντωνυμίας καὶ τὸ *Infinitive* (Ἀπαρέμφατο) τοῦ ρήματος χωρὶς τὸ *to*. Τὸ ρῆμα σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ ἀριθμοῦ παραμένει ἀμετάβλητον, ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὸ τρίτο πρόσωπο τοῦ ἐνικοῦ στὸ τέλος τοῦ ὁποίου προστίθεται τὸ γράμμα *s*,

Ὅταν τὸ ἀπαρέμφατο τοῦ ρήματος τελειώνει σὲ *s, ch, sh, x, z, ἢ o*, τότε στὸ τέλος τοῦ τρίτου προσώπου τοῦ ἐνικοῦ προστίθεται ἡ κατάληξις. *es*.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τῆς καταφατικῆς μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Present Tense* τῶν ρημάτων *to work, to speak, to bless, to teach* καὶ *to go*.

Singular

I	work	speak	bless	teach	go
you	work	speak	bless	teach	go
he	works	speaks	hlesses	teaches	goes
she	works	speaks	blesses	teaches	goes
it	works	speaks	blesses	teaches	goes

Plural

we	work	speak	bless	teach	go
you	work	speak	bless	teach	go
they	work	speak	bless	teach	go

Ἐκ τῶν ἀνωτέρω ρημάτων τὰ ρήματα *to work* καὶ *to bless* εἶναι ὁμαλά. Τὰ λοιπὰ εἶναι ἀνώμαλα.

β) Κλίσις τοῦ *Simple Present Tense* τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων.

to be *to have* *to do*

Singular

I	am	I	have	I	do
you	are	you	have	you	do
he	is	he	has	he	does
she	is	she	has	she	does
it	is	it	has	it	does

Plural

we	are	we	have	we	do
you	are	you	have	you	do
they	are	they	have	they	do

Τὰ ἔλλιπτικά βοηθητικά ρήματα *can must, ought shall* καὶ *will* παραμένουν ἀμετάβλητα σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ.

2. **Ἀρνητική μορφή.** (Negative form). α) Ὁ ἀρνητικὸς τύπος τοῦ *Simple Present* τῶν ὁμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων ρημάτων σχηματίζεται μὲ τὸν *Simple Present* τοῦ ρήματος *to do*, τὴ λέξι *not* καὶ τὸ *Infinitive* (Ἀπαρέμφατο) τοῦ ρήματος. Κατὰ τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται τὸ ρῆμα *to do*. ὅταν χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς κύριο ρῆμα.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τῆς ἀρνητικῆς μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Present* τοῦ ὁμαλοῦ ρήματος *to work*, τοῦ ἀνωμάλου *to speak*, καὶ τοῦ ρήματος *to do*. Ἐντὸς παρενθέσεως δίδομεν τὸν συντμημένο τύπο τοῦ ρήματος.

Singular

I do not work (I don't work)	I do not speak (I don't speak)
you do » » (you » »)	you do » » (you » »)
he does » » (he doesn't »)	he does » » (he doesn't »)
she » » » (she » »)	she » » » (she » »)
it » » » (it » »)	it » » » (it » »)

Plural

we do not work (we don't work)	we do not speak (we don't speak)
you » » » (you » »)	you » » » (you » »)
they » » » (they » »)	they » » » (they » »)

Singular

Plural

I do not do (I don't do)	we do not do (we don't do)
you » » » (you » »)	you » » » (you » »)
he does » » (he doesn't »)	they » » » (they » »)
she » » » (she » »)	
it » » » (it » »)	

β) Τὰ βοηθητικὰ ρήματα σχηματίζουν τὴν ἀρνητικὴν μορφήν μὲ τὴν καταφατικὴν τῶν μορφῶν καὶ τὴ λέξι *not* εἰς τὸ τέλος. Τὸ ρῆμα *to do* ἀκολουθεῖ τὸν αὐτὸν κανόνα, ὅταν χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς κύριο ρῆμα, ἀλλ' ὡς βοηθητικό.

Κλίσις τῆς ἀρνητικῆς μορφῆς τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων.

Singular

I am not (I'm not)
 you are not (you aren't, \bar{n} you're not)
 he is not (he isn't, \bar{n} he's not)
 she is not (she isn't, \bar{n} she's not)
 it is not (it isn't, \bar{n} it's not)

Plural

we are not (we aren't)
you are not (you aren't, ^ŋ you're not)
they are not (they aren't, ^ŋ they're not)

I have not (I haven't, я I've not)
 you have not (you haven't, я you've not)
 he has not (he hasn't)
 she » » (she »)
 it » » (it »)

we have not (we haven't, \bar{n}
we' ve not)
you » » (you haven't \bar{n}
you' ve not)
they » » (they haven't \bar{n}
they've not)

I	do not	(I	don't)
you	do not	(you	don't)
he	does not	(he	doesn't)
she	» »	(she	» »)
it	» »	(it	» »)

we	do not	(we	don't)
you	» »	(you	»)
they	» »	(they	»)

I	can not	(I	can't)
you	» »	(you	»)
he	» »	(he	»)
she	» »	(she	»)
it	» »	(it	»)

we	can	not	(we	can't)
you	»	»	(you	»)
they	»	»	(they	»)

Singular

Plural

I	must not	(I mustn't)	we	must not	(we mustn't)
you	»	»	you	»	»
he	»	»	they	»	»
she	»	»			
it	»	»			

I	may not	(I mayn't)	we	may not	(we mayn't)
you	»	»	you	»	»
he	»	»	they	»	»
she	»	»			
it	»	»			

I	ought not	(I oughtn't)	we	ought not	(we oughtn't)
you	»	»	you	»	»
he	»	»	they	»	»
she	»	»			
it	»	»			

I	shall not	(I shan't)	we	shall not	(we shan't)
you	»	»	you	»	»
he	»	»	they	»	»
she	»	»			
it	»	»			

I	will not	(I won't)	we	will not	(we won't)
you	»	»	you	»	»
he	»	»	they	»	»
she	»	»			
it	»	»			

3. Ἑρωτηματικὴ μορφή (Interrogative form).

α) Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ μορφή τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται μὲ ἀντιστροφὴν τῆς καταφατικῆς μορφῆς τοῦ Simple Present, ἥτοι:

am I?	— are you?	— is he? κ.λ.π.
have I?	— have you?	— has he? κ.λ.π.
do I?	— do you?	— does he? κ.λ.π.
can I?	— can you?	— can he? κ.λ.π.
must I?	— must you?	— must he? κ.λ.π.
may I?	— may you?	— may he? κ.λ.π.
ought I?	— ought you?	— ought he κ.λ.π.

Ἐκ τῶν λοιπῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων τὸ μὲν *shall*, χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ τὸν σχηματισμὸ τῆς ἐρωτημ. μορφῆς τοῦ *Future Tense* τῶν ρημάτων μόνον στὸ πρῶτο καὶ δεῦτερο πρόσωπο (*shall I? — shall we? — shall you?*), τὸ δὲ *will* χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ τὸν σχηματισμὸ τῆς ἐρωτημ. μορφῆς τοῦ *Future Tense* τῶν ρημάτων μόνον στὸ δεύτερο καὶ τρίτο πρόσωπο. (*will you? — will he?*).

β) Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Present* τῶν κανονικῶν ρημάτων (ὁμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων) σχηματίζεται μὲ τὸν ἐρωτηματικὸν τύπον τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to do* καὶ τὸ ἀπαρέμφατο τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τῆς ἐρωτηματικῆς μορφῆς τῶν ρημάτων *to work*, *to speak*, καὶ *to do*.

Singular

do I work?	do I speak?	do I do?
do you work?	do you speak?	do you do?
does he work?	does he speak?	does he do?
does she work?	does she speak?	does she do?
does it work?	does it speak?	does it do?

Plural

do we work?	do we speak?	do we do?
do you work?	do you speak?	do you do?
do they work?	do they speak?	do they do?

4. 'Αρνητικο-έρωτηματική μορφή.

α) 'Η ἀρνητικο-έρωτηματική μορφή τοῦ *Simple Present* τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται μετὰ τὴν ἐρωτηματική των μορφή καὶ τὴ λέξι *not*, ἥτοι:

Singular

am I not?	
are you not?	(aren't you?)
is he not?	(isn't he?)
is she not?	(» she?)
is it not?	(» it?)

have I not?	(haven't I?)
have you not?	(» you?)
has he not?	(hasn't he?)
» she »	(» she?)
» it »	(» it?)

do I not?	(don't I?)
do you not?	(» you?)
does he not?	(doesn't he?)
» she »	(» she?)
» it »	(» it?)

can I not?	(can't I?)
» you not?	(» you?)

κ.λ.π.

Plural

are we not?	(aren't we?)
are you not?	(» you?)
are they not?	(» they?)

have we not?	(haven't we?)
» you »	(» you?)
» they »	(» they?)

do we not?	(don't we?)
do you not?	(» you?)
do they not?	(» they?)

can we not?	(can't we?)
	κ.λ.π.

Singular

must I not? (mustn't I?)
must you not? (» you?)
κ.λ.π.

may I not?
may you not? κ.λ.π.

ought I not (oughtn't I?)
» you » (» you?)
κ.λ.π.

Plural

must we not? (mustn't we?)
κ.λ.π.

may we not?
κ.λ.π.

ought we not? (oughtn't we?)
κ.λ.π.

β) Ἡ ἄρνητικο-ἐρωτηματική μορφή τοῦ *Simple Present* τῶν ρημάτων (τῶν μὴ βοηθητικῶν) σχηματίζεται μετὰ τὴν ἄρνητικο-ἐρωτηματική μορφή τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to do* καὶ τὸ ἀπαρέμφατο τοῦ ρήματος, χωρὶς τὸ *to*.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τῆς ἄρνητικο-ἐρωτηματικῆς μορφῆς τῶν ρημάτων *to work, to speak* καὶ *to do*.

Singular

do I not work? (don't I work?)
do you » » (» you »)
does he » » (doesn't he »)
» she » » (» she »)
» it » » (» it »)

do I not speak? (don't I speak?)
do you » » (» you »)
does he » » (doesn't he »)
» she » » (» she »)
» it » » (» it »)

do I not do? (don't I do?)
do you » » (» you »)
does he » » (doesn't he »)
» she » » (» she »)
» it » » (» it »)

Plural

do we not work? (don't we work?)
do you not work? (» you »)
do they » » (» they »)

do we not speak? (don't we speak?)
do you » » (» you »)
do they » » (» they »)

do we not do? (don't we do?)
do you » » (» you »)
do they not do? (» they »)

CONTINUOUS PRESENT TENSE

Ἡ *Continuous Present Tense* ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων (ὁμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων) σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές (καταφατικήν, ἐρωτηματικήν, καὶ ἀρνητικο-ἐρωτηματικήν) μὲ τὶς ἀντίστοιχες μορφές τοῦ Present Tense τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* καὶ τὴν Present Participle (Μετοχήν Ἑνεστώτος) τοῦ κλινομένου ρήματος.

Ἀπὸ τὰ βοηθητικά ρήματα μόνον τὰ ρήματα *to be*, *to have* καὶ *to do* ἔχουν *Continuous Present*.

Σύμφωνα μὲ τὰ ἀνωτέρω ὁ *Continuous Present Tense* τῶν βοηθητικῶν *to be*, *to have*, *to do*, τοῦ ὁμαλοῦ *to work* καὶ τοῦ ἀνωμάλου *to speak* κλίνεται στὶς διάφορες μορφές ὡς ἀκολουθῶς.

1. Καταφατική μορφή

Singular

I	am	being	(having, doing, working, speaking)
you	are	»	(» » » »)
he	is	»	(» » » »)
she	is	»	(» » » »)
it	is	»	(» » » »)

Plural

we	are	being	(having, doing, working, speaking)
you	are	»	(» » » »)
they	are	»	(» » » »)

2. Ἀρνητική μορφή

Singular

I	am	not	being	(having, doing, working, speaking)
you	are	not	»	(» » » »)
he	is	not	»	(» » » »)
she	is	not	»	(» » » »)
it	is	not	»	(» » » »)

Plural

we are not being (having, doing, working, speaking)
 you are not » (» » » »)
 they are not » (» » » » »)

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή

Singular

am I being? (having? doing? working? speaking?)
 are you » (» » » » »)
 is he » (» » » » »)
 is she » (» » » » »)
 is it » (» » » » »)

Plural

are we being? (having? doing? working? speaking?)
 are you » (» » » » »)
 are they » (» » » » »)

4. 'Αρνητικο-έρωτηματική μορφή

Singular

am I not being? (having? doing? working? speaking?)
 are you not » (» » » » »)
 is he not » (» » » » »)
 is she not » (» » » » »)
 is it not » (» » » » »)

Plural

are we not being? (having? doing? working? speaking?)
 are you not » (» » » » »)
 are they not » (» » » » »)

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ PRESENT TENSE

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE

‘Ο Simple Present Tense χρησιμοποιεῖται :

α) Ὅταν πρόκειται νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν μίαν ἐνέργειαν ἢ κατάστασιν ἢ ὁποῖα εἶναι συνηθισμένη καὶ ἐπαναλαμβάνεται ἢ εἶναι μόνιμη. Στὴν περίπτωσιν αὕτῃ τὸ ρῆμα συνοδεύεται συνήθως ἀπὸ ἐπίρρημα ἢ ἐπίρρηματικὴ φράσι, ὥς αἱ ἐπόμενες : *often, never, always, generally, sometimes, rarely, seldom, usually, every now and then* (κάθε λίγο καὶ λιγάκι), *every once in a while* (κάπου - κάπου).

Παραδείγματα :

— *I often go* to Phaleron for a walk. (Πηγαίνω συχνὰ στὸ Φάληρο γιὰ περίπατο).

— My son *never goes* to bed before ten o'clock. (Ὁ γυιὸς μου δὲν κοιμᾶται ποτὲ πρὶν ἀπὸ τὴς 10).

— *I always want* to buy books, but *I never know* which books to buy. (Ἐπιθυμῶ πάντοτε ν’ ἀγοράζω βιβλία, δὲν γνωρίζω ὅμως ποτὲ τὶ βιβλία ν’ ἀγοράσω).

— On Sunday *we generally eat* roast-beef with boiled potatoes. (Γῆν Κυριακὴ γενικῶς τρῶμε ροστιμπῆφ με βραστὲς πατάτες).

— *Sometimes I buy* something in this little shop. (Μερικὲς φορὲς ἀγοράζω κάτι σ’ αὐτὸ τὸ μικρὸ κατάστημα).

— My friend *rarely receives* news from his son. (Ὁ φίλος μου σπανίως παίρνει νέα ἀπὸ τὸν γυιὸ του).

— *I seldom see* him nowadays, as he is so busy. (Σπανίως τὸν βλέπω αὐτὲς τὴς μέρες καθόσον εἶναι πολυάσχολος).

— My husband *usually comes* home about six o'clock. (Ὁ σύζυγός μου συνήθως ἔρχεται στὸ σπίτι στὶς 6 περίπου ἡ ὥρα).

— *Every now and then we find* some difficulties in our grammar exercises, but our teacher *usually explains* them very clearly. (Κάθε λίγο καὶ λιγάκι εὐρίσκομεν μερικὲς δυσκολίες στὶς γραμ-

ματικές ασκήσεις μας, ἀλλ' ὁ καθηγητὴς μας συνήθως τίς ἐξηγεῖ πολὺ καθαρά).

β) Ὅταν πρόκειται νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν μίαν γενικὴν ἀλήθειαν ἢ κάτι ποὺ θεωρεῖται ὡς ἀξίωμα.

Παραδείγματα:

— The stars *shine* at night. (Τὰ ἄστρα λάμπουν τὴ νύχτα).

— People *work* in order to eat. (Δουλεῖ κανεὶς γιὰ νὰ τρώγῃ).

— Sport *develops* the mind and the body. (Τὸ σπορ ἀναπτύσσει τὸ μυαλὸ καὶ τὸ σῶμα.)

— People *give* nothing for nothing. (Δὲν δίνει κανεὶς τίποτε χωρὶς ἀντάλλαγμα).

Books *are* friends who are always at our service. (Τὰ βιβλία εἶναι φίλοι ποὺ εἶναι πάντοτε στὴν ὑπηρεσία μας).

γ) Ὅταν πρόκειται νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν μιὰ μελλοντικὴ ἐνέργειαν ἢ κατάστασιν χρησιμοποιοῦντες μὲ τὸ ρῆμα λέξεις ἢ φράσεις ὡς αἱ ἐπόμενες: *until, when, as soon as, before, unless*, κλπ.

Μὲ τὴν λέξιν *when* χρησιμοποιεῖται ὁ *Simple Present* μὲ σημασία μελλοντικῆς ἐνεργείας μόνον, ὅταν ἡ λέξις «*when*» ἔχει τὴν σημασία τοῦ «*ὅταν*». Ὅταν ὁμως ἔχει τὴν σημασία τοῦ «*πότε*;» τότε γίνεται χρῆσις τοῦ *Simple Future*. (Μέλλοντος).

Παραδείγματα:

— *As soon as he comes* I want to see him. (Μόλις θὰ ἔλθῃ θέλω νὰ τὸν ἰδῶ).

— *When Summer comes*, we shall go to Glyfada for a holiday. (Ὅταν θὰ ἔλθῃ τὸ καλοκαίρι, θὰ πᾶμε στὴ Γλυφάδα γιὰ διακοπές).

— Please wait here *until I come* back. (Παρακαλῶ περιμένετε ἐδῶ, ἕως ὅτου ἐπιστρέψω).

— *If he comes* with us, we shall enjoy ourselves. (Ἄν θὰ ἔλθῃ μαζί μας θὰ διασκεδάσωμεν).

— We cannot leave *before we receive* our friend's answer.
(Δὲν μποροῦμε νὰ φύγωμεν πρὶν λάβωμεν τὴν ἀπάντησι τοῦ φίλου μας).

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ CONTINUOUS PRESENT TENSE

Ὁ *Continuous Present Tense* χρησιμοποιεῖται :

α) Ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια ἡ ὁποία δὲν ἔχει τελειώσει τὴν στιγμήν κατὰ τὴν ὁποίαν ἀναφερόμεθα σ' αὐτήν, ἀλλ' ἐξακολουθεῖ εἶστί.

Παραδείγματα :

— *I am looking* at the aeroplane.. (Κυττῶ τὸ ἀεροπλάνο).

— Ἑρώτησις: What *are* the children *doing*? (Τὶ κάνουν αὐτὴ τὴ στιγμή τὰ παιδιά;)

Ἀπάντησις: *They are learning* their lessons. (Μαθαίνουν τὸ μάθημά των).

— I see the postman who *is coming* with a letter in his hand. (Βλέπω τὸν ταχυδρόμο ποὺ ἔρχεται μ' ἓνα γράμμα στὸ χέρι).

— Ἑρώτησις: May I shut that window? it *is getting* cold. (Μπορῶ νὰ κλείσω αὐτὸ τὸ παράθυρο; ἀρχίζει νὰ κάνη κρύο).

Ἀπάντησις: No, please, do not; I think the fresh air *is doing* me good. (Ὁχι, παρακαλῶ, μὴ τὸ κλείνετε. Νομίζω πὼς ὁ φρέσκος ἀέρας μοῦ κάνει καλό).

β) Ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια τοῦ ἀμέσου ἢ προσεχοῦς μέλλοντος καὶ κυρίως μὲ ρήματα ποὺ σημαίνουν κίνησι. Στὴν περίπτωσιν αὐτὴν ὁ *Continuous Present* ἔχει σημασίαν Μέλλοντος. Δὲν ἀποκλείεται ὅμως στὴν περίπτωσιν αὐτὴν ἡ χρῆσις τοῦ *Future Tense* ἀντὶ τοῦ *Continuous Present*.

Παραδείγματα.

— *I am coming* in a minute (Θὰ ἔλθω σ' ἓνα λεπτό). Ἡ αὐτὴ πρότασις ἀποδίδεται καὶ μὲ *Future Tense*. ἦτοι: *I shall come* in a minute.

— *She is going* to London next week. (Θὰ πάη στὸ Λονδῖνο τὴν προσεχῇ ἐβδομάδα.) ἦ: *She will go* to London next week.

—How many days *are you staying* there? (Πόσες μέρες θὰ μείνετε ἐκεῖ;) ἦ: How many days *will you stay* there?

—*Are you going* out? (Θὰ βγῆτε;).

Yes, *I am going* for a walk till ^{the}dinner time. (Ναί, θὰ βγῶ μιὰ βόλτα ἕως τὴν ὥρα τοῦ φαγητοῦ). ἦ:

Will you go out?

Yes, *I shall go* for a walk . . .

— *He is coming* to see us on Friday. (Θὰ ἔλθῃ νὰ μᾶς ἰδῇ τὴν Παρασκευὴ) ἦ:

He will come to see us on Friday.

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ IV

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΟΥ PRESENT TENSE (SIMPLE OR CONTINUOUS)

A. Put in the correct Present Tense (Simple or Continuous)

1. I always (*to like*) to learn something new. 2. Every time his son (*to come*) here he (*to disturb*) me. 3. When you (*to leave*?) I (*to leave*) presently. 4. A good businessman (*to buy*) as cheap as possible and (*to sell*) as dear as he can. 5. As soon as you (*to meet*) him, tell him to come. 6. We (*to play*) tennis every morning. 7. My friend (*to speak*) French and English very well. I (*to speak*) French too, but with difficulty. 8. Now, I (*to see*) my brother, who (*to run*) towards the ball. 9. There is my sister who (*to come*) to see us. 10. My uncle sometimes (*to come*) to see us. 11. We often (*to go*) to the market, where we (*to buy*) everything. 12. where is Mary?—She (*to go*) to open the door. 13. My friend (*not to speak*) English well. 14. I (*to hear*) my brother, who (*to speak*) to his wife. 15. The doctor (*to advise*) me to smoke as little as possible. 16. My father (*not to like*) to get up early in the morning. 17. Who is the man, who (*to work*) at this moment in the garden? 18. He always (*to take*) a walk in the afternoon. 19. When people (*to read*), they (*to like*) quietness. 20. In England people (*not to go*) home for lunch; they (*to lunch*) in a restaurant or tea-shop or at the office. 21. My wife (*not to like*) coffee; she (*to prefer*) tea. 22. Many people (*to live*) out of town, in the suburbs. 23. What you (*to do*) this afternoon? We (*to go*) for a picnic in the forest. 24. People (*to find*) the time long when they (*to wait*). 25. Where is your sister? - She (*to come*) in a moment.

B. Translate into English.

1. Εἶπέ τον νὰ περιμένη ἕως ὅτου ἐπιστρέψω. 2. Θὰ ἐπιστρέψω πρὶν ἀπὸ τις 6½). 3. Ξοδεύομεν πολλὰ χρήματα γιὰ τὸν κῆπο μας. 4. Ὁ φίλος μου ὁμιλεῖ πολὺ καλὰ τὴν Ἀγγλική. 5. Αὐτὴ τῇ στιγμῇ ὁ φίλος μου ὁμιλεῖ Ἀγγλικά στὸν πατέρα μου. 6. Ποῦ θὰ πάτε ἀπόψε; 7. Θὰ πάμε στὸ θέατρο. 8. Ἡ γυναῖκά του μὲ διασκεδάζει ὅταν ὁμιλεῖ γιὰ κάτι ποὺ δὲν ξέρει. 9. Ὁ σύζυγός της πίνει πάρα πολὺ καὶ δὲν τρώει ἀρκετά. 10. Εἶναι πολὺ ἥσυχος ἄνθρωπος· δὲν ἐνοχλεῖ ποτὲ τοὺς γείτονάς του. 11. Ὁ σύζυγός μου ἔρχεται σπῆτι συνήθως στὶς 7 ἢ ὠρα. 12. Ποῦ εἶναι ὁ γυιός σας;—Διαβάζει τὰ μαθήματά του. 13. Αὐτὸς ὁ σκύλος καταλαβαίνει τὸ κάθε τι. 14. Πηγαίνετε κάθε βράδυ στὸν κινηματογράφου;—Ὁχι, πηγαίνω δυὸ φορὲς τὴν ἐβδομάδα. 15. Πολλοὶ ἀμνηστικοὶ πίνουν νερὸ στὸ φαγητὸ τους, ἄλλοι προτιμοῦν κρασί καὶ ἄλλοι μπύρα. 16. Δὲν βλέπω τὴν κόρη σας. Ποῦ εἶναι;—Δουλεῖ στὸ δωμάτιό της. 17. Ὁ γυιός μου συχνὰ μὲ βοηθεῖ στὴ δουλειά μου. 18. Θὰ ῥηῖτε μαζί μας;—Ὁχι, πηγαίνω νὰ δουλέψω στὸν κῆπο. 19. Ὁ γυιός σας σχεδὸν πάντοτε ἔρχεται χωρὶς βιβλία στὸ σχολεῖο. Ποῦ εἶναι τώρα;—Νάτος, ἔρχεται μὲ τὰ χέρια στὶς τσέπες του. 20. Ἐχὼ ἓνα φίλο ποὺ μένει στὴν Κηφισιά. 21. Ὁ ἀδελφός μου τρώει πάντοτε περισσότερο ἀπὸ μένα. Ἀγαπάει ἐπίσης πολὺ τὸ κρασί. Αὐτὴ τῇ στιγμῇ πίνει μαζί μὲ τοὺς φίλους του στὴ γειτονική ταβέρνα.

B. PAST TENSE

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΛΙΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ PAST TENSE

SIMPLE PAST TENSE

1. Καταφατική μορφή. Ἐνῶς σχηματισμός τῆς καταφατικῆς μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past Tense* τῶν ὁμαλῶν ρημάτων ἀκολουθεῖ ὁρισμένον κανόνα, ὁ σχηματισμός τοῦ αὐτοῦ χρόνου τῶν ἀνωμάλων ρημάτων δὲν ἀκολουθεῖ κανόνα τινά.

α) Σχηματισμός καὶ κλίσις τῆς καταφατικῆς μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past Tense* τῶν ὁμαλῶν ρημάτων.

Ἡ καταφατικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past Tense* τῶν ὁμαλῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται μὲ τὶς προσωπικὰς ἀντωνυμίας καὶ τὸ ἀπαρέμφατο τοῦ ρήματος στὸ τέλος τοῦ ὁποίου προστίθεται ἡ κατάληξις *ed* ἢ μόνον τὸ γράμμα *d*, ὅταν τὸ ἀπαρέμφατον τελειώνει σὲ *e*. Π.χ. τοῦ ὁμαλοῦ ρήματος *to answer*, ἡ καταφατικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* εἶναι *I answered (answer+d)*, τοῦ ἐπίσης ὁμαλοῦ ρήματος *to like* ἡ αὐτὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* εἶναι *I liked (like+d)* κ.ο.κ.

Παρατηρήσεις

Ρήματα μονοσύλλαβα ἢ δισύλλαβα τὰ ὅποια τονίζονται στὴ λήγουσα καὶ τὰ ὅποια τελειώνουν στὸ ἀπαρέμφατο σὲ ἓνα σύμφωνο σχηματίζουν τὴν καταφατικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* μὲ τὴν κατάληξι *ed* καὶ ταυτόχρονο διπλασιασμό τοῦ τελικοῦ συμφώνου, ὅπως π.χ.: *to step—I stepped, to permit—I permitted*, κλπ.

Ρήματα ποὺ στὸ ἀπαρέμφατο τελειώνουν σὲ *ic* παίρνουν στὸν *Simple Past* ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ τελικὸν *c* τὸ γράμμα *k* καὶ τὴν κατάληξιν *ed*, ὅπως π.χ.: *to traffic—I trafficked*.

Ρήματα ποὺ στὸ ἀπαρέμφατο τελειώνουν σὲ *y* πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ

ὁποῖον ὑπάρχει σύμφωνα, παίρνοντας τὴν κατάληξι *ed* μετατρέπουν τὸ *y* σὲ *i*, ὅπως π.χ: *to try—I tried*.

Ἡ κλίσις τῆς καταφατικῆς μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* εἶναι ἀπλουστάτη, καθόσον σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα, ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ, τὸ ρῆμα παραμένει ἀμετάβλητον.

Παραδείγματα.

Κλίσις τῆς καταφ. μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν ὁμαλῶν ρημάτων *to answer, to like, to step, to traffic* καὶ *to try*.

Singular

Plural

I, you, he (she, it) answered	we, you, they answered
I, you, he (she, it) liked	we, you, they liked
I, you, he (she, it) stepped	we, you, they stepped
I, you, he (she, it) trafficked	we, you, they trafficked
I, you, he (she, it) tried	we, you, they tried

β) Σχηματισμὸς καὶ κλίσις τῆς καταφ. μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν ἀνωμάλων ρημάτων.

Τὰ ἀνώμαλα ρήματα γιὰ τὸν σχηματισμὸ τῆς καταφ. μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* δὲν ἀκολουθοῦν κανόνα τινά. Κάθε ἀνώμαλο ρῆμα ἔχει τὸν δικό του τύπο στὸν *Simple Past*. Ὁ τύπος αὐτὸς συνήθως διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὸν τύπο τοῦ *Infinitive* (ἀπαρεμφάτου) ὅπως π.χ: α) *to drink—I drank*, β) *to go—I went*, κλπ.

Μερικὰ ἀνώμαλα ρήματα ἔχουν στὸν *Simple Past* τὸν αὐτὸν τύπο μὲ τὸ *Infinitive*, ὅπως π.χ: α) *to beat—I beat*, β) *to cut—I cut*, γ) *to shut, I shut*, κλπ.

Ἐν ὅμως τὰ ἀνώμαλα ρήματα ἔχουν ἴδιον τύπο στὸν *Simple Past*, ἢ κλίσις τοῦ τελευταίου δὲν παρουσιάζει ἀνωμαλίαν τινά. Κλίνεται ὅπως καὶ ἡ καταφατικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν ὁμαλῶν ρημάτων. Τὸ ρῆμα τοῦτέστι παραμένει ἀμετάβλητο σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα τοῦ ἐνικοῦ καὶ τοῦ πληθυντικοῦ.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τῆς καταφ. μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν ἀνωμάλων ρημάτων *to go* καὶ *to shut*.

Singular				Plural			
I	went	I	shut	we	went	we	shut
you	»	you	»	you	»	you	»
he	»	he	»	they	»	they	»
she	»	she	»				
it	»	it	»				

γ) Σχηματισμός και κλίσεις της καταφ. μορφής του *Past Tense* τών βοηθητικών ρημάτων.

Τὰ βοηθητικά ρήματα σχηματίζουν ἀνωμάλως τὸν *Past Tense*. Ἐξ αὐτῶν τὰ ρήματα *to be*, *to have* καὶ *to do* ἔχουν ἀντιστοίχως τὸν *Simple Past* ὡς ἑξῆς: *I was, I had, I did*.

Τὰ λοιπὰ ἑλλειπτικά βοηθητικά ρήματα *can, may, ought, shall* καὶ *will* ἔχουν ἀντιστοίχως τὸν *Past Tense* ὡς ἑξῆς: *I could, I might, I ought, I should* καὶ *I would*.

Τὰ βοηθητικά ρήματα παραμένουν ἀμετάβλητα σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα τοῦ ἑνικοῦ καὶ τοῦ πληθυντικοῦ πλὴν τοῦ ρήματος *to be*, τὸ ὁποῖον ἔχει τὸν τύπο *was* στὸ α' καὶ γ' πρόσωπο τοῦ ἑνικοῦ καὶ *were* στὰ λοιπὰ πρόσωπα ἑνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ.

Κατὰ ταῦτα ἡ κλίσις της καταφ. μορφής τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων ἔχει ὡς ἀκολούθως:

Singular		Plural	
I was,	you were	we,	you, they were
he (she, it) was			
I, you, he (she, it) had		we,	you, they had
I, you, he (she, it) did		we,	you, they did
I, you, he (she, it) could		we,	you, they could
I, you, he (she, it) might		we,	you, they might
I, you, he (she, it) ought		we,	you, they ought
I, you, he (she, it) should		we,	you, they should
I, you, he (she, it) would		we,	you, they would.

2. Ἀρνητικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past*.

α) Ἡ ἀρνητικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται μετὰ τὴν καταφατικὴν μορφήν τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν αὐτῶν ρημάτων καὶ τὴν προσθήκην στὸ τέλος τῆς λέξεως *not*, ἤτοι:

I was	not (I wasn't),	you were	not (you weren't),	κ.λ.π.
I had	not (I hadn't),	you had	not (you hadn't),	κ.λ.π.
I did	not (I didn't),	you did	not (you didn't),	κ.λ.π.
I could	not (I couldn't),	you could	not (you couldn't),	κ.λ.π.
I might	not (I mightn't),	you might	not (you mightn't),	κ.λ.π.
I ought	not (I oughtn't),	you ought	not (you oughtn't),	κ.λ.π.
I should	not (I shouldn't),	you should	not (you shouldn't),	κ.λ.π.
I would	not (I wouldn't),	you would	not (you wouldn't),	κ.λ.π.

β) Ἡ ἀρνητικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων, ὁμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων καὶ ἐκ τῶν βοηθητικῶν τοῦ ρήματος *to do*, διὰ τὴν χρησιμοποίησιν ὡς κύριον ρῆμα μιᾶς προτάσεως, σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται μετὰ τὴν ἀρνητικὴν μορφήν τοῦ *Simple Past* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to do* καὶ τὸ *Infinitive* τοῦ ρήματος (χωρὶς τὸ *to*).

Παραδείγματα :

Κλίσις τῆς ἀρν. μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* τοῦ ὁμαλοῦ ρήματος *to ask* καὶ τῶν ἀνωμάλων ρημάτων *to drink* καὶ *to do*.

Singular					Plural				
I	did	not (didn't)	ask		we	did	not (didn't)	ask	
you	»	»	»	»	you	»	»	»	»
			κλ.π.					κλ.π.	
I	did	not (didn't)	drink		we	did	not (didn't)	drink	
you	»	»	»	»	you	»	»	»	»
			κλ.π.					κλ.π.	
I	did	not (didn't)	do		we	did	not (didn't)	do	
you	»	»	»	»	you	»	»	»	»
			κλ.π.					κλ.π.	

3. Ἑρωτηματικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past*.

α) Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται με ἀντιστροφή τῆς καταφατικῆς μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν αὐτῶν ρημάτων, ἤτοι:

was	I?	were you?	was he? κ.λ.π.
had	I?	had you?	had he? κ.λ.π.
did	I?	did you?	did he? κ.λ.π.
could	I?	could you?	could he? κ.λ.π.
might	I?	might you?	might he κ.λ.π.
ought	I?	ought you?	ought he? κ.λ.π.
should	I?	should you?	should he? κ.λ.π.
would	I?	would you?	would he? κ.λ.π.

β) Ἡ ἐρωτηματικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων, ὁμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων, καὶ ἐκ τῶν βοηθητικῶν τοῦ ρήματος *to do*, ὅταν χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς κύριον ρῆμα μιᾶς προτάσεως, σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται με τὴν ἐρωτηματικὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to do* (did I?, did you?, κ.λ.π.) καὶ τὸ *Infinitive* τοῦ ρήματος (χωρὶς τὸ *to*).

Παραδείγματα;

Κλίσις τῆς ἐρωτημ. μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν ρημάτων *to do*, *to ask* καὶ *to drink*.

Singular	Plural
did I do?	did we do?
did you do? κ.λ.π.	did you do? κ.λ.π.
did I ask?	did we ask?
did you ask? κ.λ.π.	did you ask? κ.λ.π.
did I drink?	did we drink?
did you drink? κ.λ.π.	did you drink? κ.λ.π.

4. Ἀρνητικο - ἐρωτηματική μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past*.

α) Ἡ ἀρνητικο - ἐρωτηματική μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται μετὰ τὴν ἐρωτηματική μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν αὐτῶν ρημάτων καὶ τὴν προσθήκη στὸ τέλος τῆς λέξεως *not*, ἥτοι:

was	I not? (wasn't I?)	were	you not? (weren't you?)	κ.λ.π.
had	I not? (hadn't I?)	had	you not? (hadn't you?)	κ.λ.π.
did	I not? (didn't I?)	did	you not? (didn't you?)	κ.λ.π.
could	I not? (couldn't I?)	could	you not? (couldn't you?)	κ.λ.π.
might	I not? (mightn't I?)	might	you not? (mightn't you?)	κ.λ.π.
ought	I not? (oughtn't I?)	ought	you not? (oughtn't you?)	κ.λ.π.
should	I not? (shouldn't I?)	should	you not? (shouldn't you?)	κ.λ.π.
would	I not? (wouldn't I?)	would	you not? (wouldn't you?)	κ.λ.π.

β) Ἡ ἀρνητικο - ἐρωτηματική μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων, ὁμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων καὶ τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ *to do*, ὡς κυρίου ρήματος προτάσεως, σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται μετὰ τὴν ἀρνητικο - ἐρωτηματική μορφή τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to do* (did I not? κλπ), καὶ τὸ *Infinitive* τοῦ ρήματος χωρὶς τὸ *to*.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσεις τῆς ἀρνητικο - ἐρωτηματικῆς μορφῆς τοῦ *Simple Past* τῶν ρημάτων *to do*, *to ask* καὶ *to drink*.

Singular	Plural
did I not (didn't I) do?	did we not (didn't we) do?
did you not (» you) »	did you not (» you) »
κ.λ.π.	κ.λ.π.
did I not (didn't I) ask?	did we not (didn't we) ask?
did you not (» you) »	did you not (» you) »
κ.λ.π.	κ.λ.π.
did I not (didn't I) drink?	did we not (didn't we) drink?
did you not (» you) »	did you not (» you) »
κ.λ.π.	κ.λ.π.

CONTINUOUS PAST TENSE

Ἡ *Continuous Past Tense* ὄλων τῶν ρημάτων, ὁμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων, σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφὰς (καταφατική, ἀρνητική, κλπ.) μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* (I was, I was not, κλπ.) καὶ τὴν *Present Participle* (μετοχή ἐνεστώτος) τοῦ ρήματος.

Ἐκ τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων *Continuous Present* ἔχουν μόνον τὰ ρήματα *to be*, *to have* καὶ *to do*, ὅταν τὸ τελευταῖο τοῦτο χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς κύριο ρῆμα μιᾶς προτάσεως.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Continuous Past* τῶν ρημάτων *to do*, *to ask* καὶ *to drink*.

1) Καταφατικὴ μορφή.

Singular

Plural

I was doing, you were doing, κλπ.	we were doing κλπ.
I was asking, you were asking, κλπ.	we were asking, κλπ.
I was drinking, you were drinking, κλπ.	we were drinking κλπ.

2) Ἀρνητικὴ μορφή.

Singular

Plural

I was not (wasn't) doing	we were not (weren't) doing
you were not (weren't) »	κ.λ.π.
κ.λ.π.	
I was not (wasn't) asking	we were not (weren't) asking
you were not (weren't) »	κ.λ.π.
κ.λ.π.	

Singular	Plural
I was not (wasn't) drinking	we were not (weren't) drinking
you were not (weren't) »	κ.λ.π.
κ.λ.π.	

3) 'Ερωτηματική μορφή.

Singular	Plural
was I doing?	were we doing?
were you » κ.λ.π.	κ.λ.π.
was I asking?	were we asking?
were you » κ.λ.π.	κ.λ.π.
was I drinking?	were we drinking?
were you » κ.λ.π.	κ.λ.π.

4) 'Αρνητικο-έρωτηματική μορφή.

Singular	Plural
was I not (wasn't I) doing?	were we not (weren't we) doing ?
were you not (weren't you) »	κ.λ.π.
κ.λ.π.	
was I not (wasn't I) asking?	were we not (weren't we) asking ?
were you not (weren't you) »	κ.λ.π.
κ.λ.π.	
was I not (wasn't I) drinking?	were we not (weren't we) drinking ?
were you not (weren't you) »	κ.λ.π.
κ.λ.π.	

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ PAST TENSE

Γενικά. Ἐάν, καθὼς εἶδαμε, ὁ σχηματισμὸς καὶ ἡ κλίσις τοῦ *Past Tense* (Simple ἢ Continuous) παρουσιάζουν ἀπλότητα, τοῦναντίον ἡ χρῆσις αὐτοῦ στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ δὲν εἶναι ἕξ ἴσου ἀπλὴ γιὰ τὸν Ἑλληνα σπουδαστή. Τοῦτο προέρχεται κυρίως ἀπὸ τὴν ἀπλοποίησιν τῆς χρήσεως τῶν χρόνων τῶν ρημάτων στὴν Ἑλληνικὴ δημοτικὴ γλῶσσαν, στὴν ὁποία σχεδὸν πάντοτε γιὰ ἐνέργεια ποῦ ἔγινε στὸ παρελθὸν χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν Ἀόριστο, ἀκόμα καὶ ἐκεῖ ποῦ στὴν καθαρεύουσα χρησιμοποιεῖται Παρακείμενος ἢ καὶ Ὑπερσυντέλικος. Καὶ ἡ μὲν ἀπόδοσις τοῦ *Past Tense* (Simple ἢ Continuous) ἐκ τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς στὴν Ἑλληνικὴ εἶναι ἀπλὴ καὶ εὐκόλῃ. Ἀποδίδομεν συνήθως τὸν *Simple Past* τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς μὲ τὸν Ἀόριστο τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς καὶ τὸν *Continuous Past* μὲ τὸν Παρατατικὸν τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς, ὅπως π.χ. στὰ παραδείγματα: Yesterday afternoon *I met* your brother in a shop. (Χθὲς τὸ ἀπόγευμα συνήντησα τὸν ἀδελφόν σου σ' ἓνα κατάστημα). Last Monday when *I entered* his office *he was speaking* to his wife. (Τὴν περασμένη Δευτέρα ὅταν μπῆκα στὸ γραφεῖο του μιλοῦσε μὲ τὴ γυναῖκα του). Αὐτὸ ὅμως ποῦ γίνεται μὲ τὴν ἀπόδοσιν ἀπὸ τὴν Ἀγγλικὴν στὴν Ἑλληνικὴ δὲν συμβαίνει καὶ ἀντίθετα. Δὲν ἀποδίδομεν ἰουτέστι πάντοτε τὸν Ἀόριστο τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς μὲ *Simple Past* τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς ἢ τὸν Παρατατικὸν τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς μὲ *Continuous Past* τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς. Ὑπάρχουν περιπτώσεις κατὰ τίς ὁποῖες ὁ Παρατατικὸς τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς ἀποδίδεται μὲ *Simple Past* τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς καὶ ὁ Ἀόριστος τῆς Ἑλληνικῆς μὲ *Present Perfect* ἢ καὶ μὲ *Past Perfect* τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς. Κι' ἐδῶ ἀκριβῶς ἔγκειται ἡ μεγαλύτερη δυσχέρεια ποῦ συναντᾷ ὁ Ἑλλὴν σπουδαστὴς τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς.

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ SIMPLE PAST

Ὁ *Simple Past* χρησιμοποιεῖται στὴν Ἀγγλική, ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια ποὺ ἐγίνε σὲ ὁρισμένο χρόνο στὸ παρελθὸν καὶ ἡ ὁποία ἐνέργεια ἔχει τελειώσει τὴ στιγμὴ κατὰ τὴν ὁποίαν ἀναφερόμεθα εἰς αὐτήν.

Παραδείγματα:

Yesterday morning *I saw* her looking into the shopwindows in Ermou street. (Χθὲς τὸ πρωῒ *τὴν εἶδα* νὰ κοιτάῃ τὰ βιτρίνες στὴν ὁδὸν Ἑρμοῦ).

They arrived here last week. (Ἐφθάσαν ἔδῳ τὴν περασμένην ἑβδομάδα).

Last Sunday *he looked* for me. (Τὴν περασμένη Κυριακὴ *ἔψαχνε* νὰ μὲ βρῇ).

Yesterday evening walking down the street *I saw* your father. (Χθὲς βράδυ περπατῶντας στὸ δρόμο εἶδα τὸν πατέρα σας).

We did not play yesterday morning; *we preferred* to study. (Δὲν *παίξαμε* χθὲς τὸ πρωῒ· *προτιμήσαμε* νὰ μελετήσωμεν).

We hoped to see you yesterday evening in the theatre. (Ἦλπίσαμε νὰ σᾶς ἴδοῦμε χθὲς βράδυ στὸ Θέατρο).

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ CONTINUOUS PAST

Ὁ *Continuous Past* χρησιμοποιεῖται:

α) Ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια ποὺ ἄρχισε στὸ παρελθὸν καὶ συνεχίζετο τὴ στιγμὴ κατὰ τὴν ὁποία ἔλαβε χώρα μιὰ ἄλλη ἐνέργεια.

Παραδείγματα:

Last Monday when I entered his office *he was writing* a letter. (Όταν την περασμένη Δευτέρα μπήκα στο γραφείο του έγραφε μιὰ ἐπιστολή).

I was playing the piano, when he entered my room. (Έπαιζα πιάνο, όταν μπήκε στο δωμάτιό μου).

When I entered the room, the little girl *was sitting* on her mother's knees. (Όταν μπήκα στο δωμάτιο, ἡ μικρούλα καθόταν στα γόνατα τῆς μητέρας της).

When I saw her *she was holding* something in her hand. (Όταν τὴν εἶδα κρατοῦσε κάτι στο χέρι της).

(β) Όταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια πού ἄρχισε στο παρελθόν πρὶν ἀπὸ ὥρισμένο χρόνο καὶ πού ἐξακολουθοῦσε κατὰ τὸν ὥρισμένο αὐτὸ χρόνο.

Παραδείγματα.

Last Monday I *was working* at 3 o' clock in the morning. (Τὴν περασμένη Δευτέρα στὶς 3 τὸ πρωῒ δούλευα).

On the 23 of March 1915 the battle *was still continuing*. (Στὶς 23 Μαρτίου 1915 ἡ μάχη συνεχίζετο ἀκόμη).

Yesterday I began my work at six o'clock in the morning and at eleven o'clock *I was still working*. (Χθὲς ἄρχισα τὴ δουλειά μου στὶς 6 τὸ πρωῒ καὶ στὶς 11 δούλευα ἀκόμη).

Last Saturday at nine o'clock in the morning I saw your sister standing in front of a shopwindow and half an hour later when I passed again she was still standing there.

(Τὸ περασμένο Σάββατο στὶς 9 τὸ πρωῒ εἶδα τὴν ἀδελφή σας νὰ στέκεται μπροστὰ σὲ μιὰ βιτρίνα καὶ μετὰ μισὴ ὥρα ποὺ ξαναπέρασα στεκόταν ἀκόμη ἐκεῖ).

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΟΥ PAST TENSE (SIMPLE OR CONTINUOUS)

A. Put in the correct Past Tense (Simple or Continuous.)

1. When I (*to be*) young, I (*not to have*) much money. 2. Yesterday afternoon I (*to see*) her when she (*to go*) into the cinema. 3. Last Sunday I (*to receive*) a letter from your friend. 4. Yesterday one of the boys (*to lose*) his way, and we (*can not*) find him for more than an hour. 5. When my mother (*to enter*) my room, I (*to read*) my lessons. 6. Last month I (*to send*) twenty pounds to my son who (*to live*) in London. 7. Last night we (*to go*) to the theatre; we (*to arrive*) very early long before the curtain (*to go up*). 8. This morning going down the street I (*to see*) your daughter who (*to look*) into the shop windows. 9. This (*to happen*) in England, a few years before the war. 10. Last night my friend (*to go*) home at midnight; his wife (*to wait*) for him at the door. 11. This morning I (*to see*) my friend who (*to paint*) his name on the gate of his house. 12. It was a quarter to eight when my friend (*to leave*) his wife; his train (*to be*) at seven fifty two. So he (*to have not*) time to lose; he (*to hasten*) his step and he (*to stop*) only when he (*to see*) the station clock, which (*to show*) only seven forty-six. 13. When I (*to enter*) the waiting-room everyone (*to read*) and (*to smoke*) except two ladies who (*to talk*) vividly. 14. This morning I (*to see*) your son, who (*to walk*) so fast that I (*to think*) he (*to run*). 15. His teacher (*to repeat*) his question twice, but my son he (*not to answer*) a

word 16. Last week I (*to quarrel*) with him about what ought to be done 17. Yesterday I (*to see*) the workmen who (*to open*) a new road through the forest. 18 Last week the tailor (*to measure*) me for a new suit of clothes 19. Last night during the party they (*to behave*) like children. 20. This morning I (*to see*) a thief who (*to jump*) down from the wall of the garden.

B. Translate into English.

1. Χθές βράδυ μελέτησα όλα τὰ μαθήματά μου. 5. Καθὼς πήγαινα στὸ γραφεῖο μου σήμερα τὸ πρωὶ συνάντησα τὸν ἀδελφὸ σας καὶ μιλήσαμε γιὰ τὴ γυναστὴ ὑπόθεσι. 3. Χθές ἔβρεχε ὅλη τὴν ἡμέρα. 4. Ὅταν μοῦ τηλεφωνήσατε σήμερα τὸ πρωὶ δοῦλενα στὸν κῆπο. 5 Χθές βράδυ, ὅταν ἦλθε ὁ φίλος σου, διάβαζα Ἀγγλικά. 6. Πῆρα ἓνα γράμμα του τὴν περασμένη ἑβδομάδα· μοῦ ἔγραφε νὰ συναντήσω τὸν ἀδελφὸ του ἀλλὰ δὲν τὸ κατώρθωσα. 7. Ὅταν τὸ μεσημέρι ἔφθουσα σπῖτι ἡ κόρη μου ἔπαιζε πιάνο. 8 Ὅταν συνέβη τὸ ἀτύχημα ὠδηγοῦσε τὸ αὐτοκίνητο ὁ ἀδελφός μου. 9. Συνάντησα χθές στὸ δρόμο ἓνα ἑβραῖο πού ἀγόραζε παλῆὰ πράγματα. 10 Ὅταν χθές τὸ ἀπόγευμα ξεκίνησα γιὰ τὸ γραφεῖο μου ἔβρεχε δυνατὰ καὶ ἀναγκάστηκα νὰ πάω ὀμπρέλλα. 11. Ξέχουσα χθές νὰ πάω στὴν Τράπεζα κι' ἔτσι εἶμαι χωρὶς λεφτά. 12. Χθές ὁ φίλος σου ἔτρεχε γιὰ νὰ προλάβῃ τὸ τραῖνο. 13. Τὸ τηλεγράφημά σου ἦρθε τὴ στιγμὴ πού ἔφευγα ἀπὸ τὸ σπῖτι. 14. Ὅταν πῆγα προχθές σπῖτι του ἠῦρα τὴν πόρτα κλειστή· χτύπησα πολλές φορὲς ἀλλὰ κανεὶς δὲν ἀπήντησε. 15. Προσπαθοῦσε χθές νὰ μὲ πείσῃ ἀλλὰ δὲν τὸ κατώρθωσε. 16. Ἐπειρονα τὸ δεῖπνο μου τὴν ὥρα πού μοῦ τηλεφωνήσατε χθές βράδυ καὶ γι' αὐτὸ ἀργήσα νὰ ἔλθω στὸ τηλέφωνο. 17. Τὸν περασμένο μῆνα τὸν συναντοῦσα σχεδὸν κάθε μέρα. 18. Ὅταν ἡ γυναῖκα μου μπῆκε στὸ λεωφορεῖο ὁ γυιὸς σας σηκώθηκε καὶ τῆς πρόσφερε τὴ θέσι του.

Γ. PRESENT PERFECT

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΛΙΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ PRESENT PERFECT

SIMPLE PRESENT PERFECT

Ὁ *Simple Present Perfect* ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων, (δμαλῶν καὶ ἀνωμάλων), σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του (καταφατική, ἀρνητική, κλπ.) μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχη μορφή τοῦ *Simple Present* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* καὶ τὴν *Past Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Simple Present Perfect* τῶν ρημάτων *to do*, *to work* καὶ *to write*.

1) Καταφατική μορφή.

Singular

I have done	I have worked	I have written
you have done	you have worked	you have written
he has done	he has worked	he has written
she has done	she has worked	she has written
it has done	it has worked	it has written

Plural

we have done	we have worked	we have written
you have done	you have worked	we have written
they have done	they have worked	they have written

2. Ἀρνητική μορφή

Singular

I	have not	done	I	have not	worked	I	have not	written
you	have not	done	you	have not	worked	you	have not	written
he	has not	done	he	has not	worked	he	has not	written
she	has not	done	she	has not	worked	she	has not	written
it	has not	done	it	has not	worked	it	has not	written

Plural

we	have not	done	we	have not	worked	we	have not	written
you	have not	done	you	have not	worked	you	have not	written
they	have not	done	they	have not	worked	they	have not	written

3. Ἑρωτηματική μορφή

Singular

have I	done?	have I	worked?	have I	written?
have you	done?	have you	worked?	have you	written?
has he	done?	has he	worked?	has he	written?
has she	done?	has she	worked?	has she	written?
has it	done?	has it	worked?	has it	written?

Plural

have we	done?	have we	worked?	have we	written?
have you	done?	have you	worked?	have you	written?
have they	done?	have they	worked?	have they	written?

4. 'Αρνητικο - 'Ερωτημανική μορφή

Singular

have I not done? have I not worked? have I not written?
have you not done? have you not worked? have you not written?
has he not done? has he not worked? has he not written?
has she not done? has she not written? has she not written?
has it not done? has it not worked? has it not written?

Plural

have we not done? have we not worked? have we not written?
have you not done? have you not worked? have you not written?
have they not done? have they not worked? have they not written?

CONTINUOUS PRESENT PERFECT

*Ο *Continuous Present Perfect* όλων τῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του (καταφατική, ἀρνητική, κ.λ.π.) μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχη μορφή τοῦ *Simple Present Perfect* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* καὶ τὴν *Present Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα

Κλίσις τοῦ *Continuous Present Perfect* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to write*.

1. Καταφατική μορφή

Singular

I	have been doing,	working,	writing
you	have been doing,	working,	writing
he	has been doing,	working,	writing
she	has been doing,	working,	writing
it	has been doing,	working,	writing

Plural

we	have been doing,	working,	writing
you	have been doing,	working,	writing
they	have been doing,	working,	writing

2. 'Αρνητική μορφή.

Singular

I	have not been doing,	working,	writing
you	have not been doing,	working,	writing
he	has not been doing,	working,	writing
she	has not been doing,	working,	writing
it	has not been doing,	working,	writing

Plural

I	have not been doing,	working,	writing
you	have not been doing,	working,	writing
they	have not been doing,	working,	writing

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή

Singular

have I	been doing?	working?	writing?
have you	been doing?	working?	writing?
has he	been doing?	working?	writing?
has she	been doing?	working?	writing?
has it	been doing?	working?	writing?

Plural

have we been doing?	working?	writing?
have you been doing?	working?	writing?
have they been doing?	working?	writing?

4. Ἀρνητικό - ἐρωτηματική μορφή

Singular

have I not been doing?	working?	writing?
have you not been doing?	working?	writing?
has he not been doing?	working?	writing?
has she not been doing?	working?	writing?
has it not been doing?	working?	writing?

Plural

have we not been doing?	working?	writing?
have you not been doing?	working?	writing?
have they not been doing?	working?	writing?

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ PRESENT PERFECT

Ὁ *Simple Present Perfect* χρησιμοποιεῖται :

α) Ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ πράξι πού ἔγινε στό παρελθόν χωρίς ὅμως νά καθορίζεται ὁ χρόνος κατὰ τὸν ὁποῖον ἔγινε ἡ πράξις αὕτη.

Παραδείγματα :

Have you written to your son? (Γράψατε στὸν γιού σας;) ἔνῳ:

Did you write to your son last Sunday? (Γράψατε στὸ γιού σας τὴν περασμένη Κυριακή;)

Στὸ πρῶτο παράδειγμα χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν *Simple Present Perfect* (Have you written?) γιατί δὲν καθορίζεται ὁ χρόνος κατὰ τὸν ὁποῖον ἔγινε ἡ πράξις, ἐνῶ στὸ δεύτερο παράδειγμα χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν *Simple Past Tense* (Did you write?) γιατί καθορίζεται ὁ χρόνος κατὰ τὸν ὁποῖον ἔγινε ἡ πράξις στὸ παρελθόν (last Sunday). Τὸ αὐτὸ συμβαίνει καὶ στὰ ἐπόμενα παραδείγματα.

My daughter is not at home; *he has gone* out. (Ἡ κόρη μου δὲν εἶναι σπίτι· βγῆκε ἔξω) **ἐνῶ**:

My daughter is not at home; two hours ago *she went out*.

My father *has bought* a new radio. (Ὁ πατέρας μου ἀγόρασε ἕνα καινούργιο ραδιόφωνο). **ἐνῶ**:

Yesterday my father *bought* a new radio.

β) Ὃταν πρόκειται γιὰ πράξι πού μόλις πρὸ ὀλίγου ἔχει τελειώσει.

Π α ρ α δ ε ἰ γ μ α τ α.

I have just received a letter from my friend. (Μόλις πῆρα ἕνα γράμμα ἀπὸ τὸν φίλο μου).

My mother *has just gone* out. (Ἡ μητέρα μου βγῆκε μόλις πρὸ ὀλίγου.)

A minute ago I was working, but now *I have finished*. (Πρὸ ἐνὸς λεπτοῦ δούλευα, τώρα ὅμως ἔχω τελειώσει).

γ) Ὃταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια ἡ ὁποία ἄρχισε στὸ παρελθόν, συνεχίζεται τῇ στιγμῇ πού ἀναφερόμεθα σ' αὐτήν καὶ ἡ φύσις της εἶναι τέτοια ὥστε νὰ διεξάσσεται οὐχὶ συνεχῶς, ἀλλὰ μὲ διακοπές.

Καὶ ἐπειδὴ πρόκειται περὶ περιπτώσεως ἡ ὁποία πολλὰς φορὰς συγγέεται μὲ τὴν περιπτώσει χρησιμοποίησεως τοῦ *Continuous Present Perfect* θὰ δώσωμεν εὐθύς ἀμέσως καὶ τὸν κανόνα χρησιμοποίησεως τοῦ τελευταίου τύπου.

Ὁ *Continuous Present Perfect* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν πρόκειται, γιὰ ἐνέργεια ἢ κατάσταση ἡ ὁποία ἄρχισε στὸ παρελθόν καὶ συνεχίζεται ἔκτοτε χωρὶς διακοπὴ μέχρι τῆς στιγμῆς πού ἀναφερόμεθα σ' αὐτήν.

Παράδειγματα:

I have worked at this factory for ten years. (Έργάζομαι σ' αὐτὸ τὸ ἐργοστάσιο ἐπὶ δέκα χρόνια). Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ χρησιμοποιῶμε τὸν Simple Present Perfect (*I have worked*) γιατί πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια (ἐργασία) ἡ ὁποία ἄρχισε στὸ παρελθόν (πρὶν ἀπὸ 10 χρόνια) καὶ συνεχίζεται τῇ στιγμῇ ποὺ ἀναφερόμεθα σ' αὐτή. Ἐπὶ πλέον ἡ φύσις τῆς ἐνεργείας εἶναι τέτοια, ὥστε νὰ μὴ εἶναι δυνατόν νὰ διεξάγεται συνεχῶς ἐπὶ 10 χρόνια, χωρὶς διακοπές.

Ἐν τούτοις τὸ ρῆμα τῆς αὐτῆς προτάσεως εἶναι δυνατὸν ν' ἀποδοθῇ καὶ μὲ *Continuous Present Perfect*, ἂν εἰς τὸ ρῆμα δοθῇ ἡ ἔννοια ὅχι τοῦ ὅτι «ἐκτελῶ τὴν ἐργασία», ἀλλὰ τοῦ ὅτι «εἶμαι ὑπάλληλος ἢ ἐργάτης» εἰς αὐτὸ τὸ ἐργοστάσιο. Ὅποτε ἡ πρότασις θ' ἀποδοθῇ ὡς ἑξῆς:

I have been working at this factory for ten years.

—*I have smoked* cigarettes, for five years. (Καπνίζω τσιγάρα ἐπὶ πέντε χρόνια).

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ χρησιμοποιῶμε τὸν Simple Present Perfect (*I have smoked*) γιατί πρόκειται γιὰ πράξι ποὺ ἄρχισε στὸ παρελθόν (πρὸ 5 χρόνων) καὶ συνεχίζεται τῇ στιγμῇ ποὺ ἀναφερόμεθα σ' αὐτή. Ἐπὶ πλέον ἡ φύσις τῆς πράξεως (τοῦ καπνίσματος) εἶναι τέτοια, ὥστε νὰ μὴ εἶναι δυνατόν νὰ καπνίζῃ κανεὶς τσιγάρα χωρὶς διακοπὴ ἐπὶ 5 χρόνια.

Τὸ ρῆμα τῆς ἀνωτέρω προτάσεως, ὡς ἔχει, δὲν ἀποδίδεται μὲ *Continuous Present Perfect*.

Ἐὰν ὅμως ἐπρόκειτο περὶ καπνίσματος ποὺ ἄρχισε πρὸ τινῶν ὥρῶν, π.χ. πρὸ 3 ὥρῶν καὶ συνεχίζετο χωρὶς διακοπὴ (πρᾶγμα δυνατόν νὰ συμβῇ) μέχρι τῆς στιγμῆς ποὺ ἀναφερόμεθα σ' αὐτό, τότε θὰ χρησιμοποιήσωμε τὸν *Continuous Present Perfect*.

Οὕτω ἡ πρότασις π.χ. «Καπνίζω τσιγάρα ἀπὸ τριῶν ὥρῶν» ἀποδίδεται στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ ὡς ἑξῆς: *I have been smoking* cigarettes for three hours.

—*I have met* him in the club every morning for the last two years. (Τὸν συναντῶ κάθε πρωτὶ στὴ Λέσχη τὰ τελευταῖα δυὸ χρόνια). Καὶ στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ χρησιμοποιῶμε τὸν Simple Present Perfect (*I have met*) γιατί πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια (συνάν.

τησι), πού άρχισε στο παρελθόν (πρίν από δυò χρόνια), συνεχί-
ται τή στιγμή πού αναφερόμεθα σ' αὐτή και δέν είναι συνεχής.
(Τόν συναντῶ κάθε πρωί και ὄχι συνεχῶς). Καί τò ρήμα τῆς προ-
τάσεως αὐτῆς δέν ἀποδίδεται μὲ Continuous Present Perfect.

—You must stop now as *you have been playing* foot-ball
for more than an hour. (Πρέπει γὰ σταματήσετε τώρα γιατί παίξε-
τε φουτμπῶλ περισσότερο ἀπὸ μιὰ ὥρα). Πρόκειται περὶ συνεχοῦς
και ἄνευ διακοπῆς ἐνεργείας (παίξιμο τοῦ φουτμπῶλ). Στὸ παρά-
δειγμα αὐτὸ τò ρήμα δέν ἀποδίδεται μὲ Simple Present Perfect.

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ VI

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΟΥ PRESENT PERFECT

α) *Put in the correct Present Perfect (Simple or Con-
tinuous).*

1. My father (*to be*) in Paris several times. Now he (*not to travel*) for five years. 2. I don't think that the doctor is in his office. I suppose he (*to go*) to visit a patient in the suburbs. 3. She never (*to go*) to school since 1950. 4. The postman just (*to leave*). 5. My brother (*to decide*) to buy a new car. 6. We (*to live*) in Imbrou Street; We (*to live*) there for five years. 7. He is not tired although he (*to work*) for ten hours. 8. My son (*to study*) French for six years, but he cannot make himself understood. 9. You are very late; your friend (*to wait*) for you for half an hour. 10. I just (*to see*) your son passing by our house. 11. He (*to try*) to persuade me for more than an hour. 12. Although I (*to meet*) him several times I cannot

remember his name. 13. He used to be at the Institute, but he (*to give up*) now the idea of studying English. 14. He never (*to be*) in London. 15. It is natural that his son should speak English well because he (*to speak*) English all his life. 16. He (*to smoke*) without stopping for more than two hours. 17. The train just (*to leave*) the station; you are too late. 18. My sister (*to play*) piano for three hours. 19. We are having very good weather at present; it (*not to rain*) for several weeks. 20. My brother (*to work*) at this job for ten years.

β) *Translate into English.*

1. Ξεχάσαμε να είδοποιήσωμε τὸν ἀδελφό σας νὰ ἔλθῃ. 2. Ποῦ εἶναι ὁ γυιὸς σας; Μελετᾷ τὰ μαθήματα του ἐδῶ καὶ τρεῖς ὥρες. 3. Διάβασα τὸ γράμμα του πολλὰς φορὰς. 4. Δὲν πῆγα ποτὲ στὸ Λονδίνο ἂν καὶ ὁ γυιὸς μου μένει ἐκεῖ συνεχῶς ἐπὶ πέντε χρόνια. 5. Μόλις πρὸ ὀλίγου τελείωσα τὸ διάβασμα τοῦ βιβλίου ποὺ μοῦ δανείσατε. 6. Ὁ πατέρας μου δούλεψε σκληρὰ ὅλη του τὴν ζωὴ κι' ἐξακολουθεῖ ἀκόμα νὰ δουλεύῃ. 7. Γιατὶ βραδύνετε νὰ ἔλθετε; σᾶς περιμένω μὴ ὥρα. 8. Πολλοὶ σεισμοὶ ἔγιναν τώρα τελευταῖα. 9. Μένω μὲν σ' αὐτὸ τὸ σπίτι ἀπὸ τὸ 1945. 10. Ἐπὶ πέντε χρόνια μελετᾷ Ἀγγλικά, ἀλλὰ δὲν κατόρθωσε ἀκόμα νὰ πάρῃ τὸ δίπλωμά του. 11. Δὲν σταματᾷς τὴ δουλειά; ἔχεις τρεῖς ὥρες ποὺ δουλεύεις. 12. Μπορεῖς νὰ μπῆς στὴν αἵθουσα; μόλις ἄρχισε τὸ μάθημα. 13. Ὁ κηπουρὸς δουλεύει ἀπὸ τὸ πρωῒ στὸν κῆπο· πρέπει νὰ σταματήσῃ γιὰ τὸ μεσημεριανὸ φαγητό. 14. Διάβασα αὐτὸ τὸ μυθιστόρημα· εἶναι πολὺ ἐνδιαφέρον. 15. Ἐπισκέφθηκα πολλὰς φορὰς αὐτὸ τὸ προάστειο καὶ δὲν μ' ἀρέσει πλέον. 16. Πῆγε στὸ Παρίσι πρὸ μηνὸς, ἀλλὰ δὲν μᾶς ἔγραψε ἀκόμα. 17. Μόλις εἶδα τὸν ἀδελφόν σου νὰ περνᾷ μὲ μιὰ μεγάλη παρέα. 18. Στὸν δρόμο αὐτὸ δουλεύουν ἑκατὸ ἐργάται ἐπὶ ἓνα μῆνα, χωρὶς νὰ τὸν τελειώσουν ἀκόμα. 19. Ἡ ἀστυνομία δὲν κατόρθωσε ἀκόμα νὰ πιάσῃ τὸν διαρρήκτη. 20. Ὁ καιρὸς ἄλλαξε τώρα τελευταῖα. 21. Ταξιδεύω ἐπὶ τρεῖς μέρες χωρὶς ἀκόμα νὰ φθάσω στὸ τέρμα τοῦ ταξιδιοῦ μου.

Δ. PAST PERFECT

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΛΙΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ PAST PERFECT

SIMPLE PAST PERFECT

Ὁ *Simple Past Perfect* ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχη μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to have* καὶ τὴν *Past Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Simple Past Perfect* τῶν ρημάτων *to do*, *to like* καὶ *to see*.

1. Καταφατική μορφή.

Singular

I	had done	I	had liked	I	had seen
you	had done	you	had liked	you	had seen
he (she, it)	had done	he (she, it)	had liked	he (she, it)	had seen

Plural

we	had done	we	had liked	we	had seen
you	had done	you	had liked	you	had seen
they	had done	they	had liked	they	had seen

2) 'Αρνητική μορφή.

Singular				Plural			
I	had	not	done	we	had	not	done
you	had	not	done	you	had	not	done
he (she,it)	had	not	done	they	had	not	done
I	had	not	liked	we	had	not	liked
you	had	not	liked	you	had	not	liked
he (she,it)	had	not	liked	they	had	not	liked
I	had	not	seen	we	had	not	seen
you	had	not	seen	you	had	not	seen
he (she,it)	had	not	seen	they	had	not	seen

3) 'Ερωτηματική μορφή.

Singular							
had I	done?	had I	liked?	had I	seen?		
had you	done?	had you	liked?	had you	seen?		
had he (she,it)	done?	had he (she,it)	liked?	had he (she,it)	seen?		
Plural							
had we	done?	had we	liked?	had we	seen?		
had you	done?	had you	liked?	had you	seen?		
had they	done?	had they	liked?	had they	seen?		

4. 'Αρνητικο - ερωτηματική μορφή.

Singular				Plural			
had I	not	done?		had we	not	done?	
had you	not	done?		had you	not	done?	
had he (she,it)	not	done?		had they	not	done?	

Singular

Plural

had I not liked?
had you not liked?
had he (she, it) not liked?

had we not liked?
had you not liked?
had they not liked?

had I not seen?
had you not seen?
had he (she, it) not seen?

had we not seen?
had you not seen?
had they not seen?

CONTINUOUS PAST PERFECT

Ὁ *Continuous Past Perfect* ὄλων τῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχη μορφή τοῦ *Simple Past Perfect* (I had been) τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* καὶ τὴν *Present Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα.

Κλίσις τοῦ *Continuous Past Perfect* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to work*.

1. Καταφατικὴ μορφή

Singular

Plural

I had been doing
you had been doing
he (she, it) had been doing

we had been doing
you had been doing
they had been doing

I had been working
you had been working
he (she, it) had been working

we had been working
you had been working
they had been working

2. 'Αρνητική μορφή.

Singular	Plural
I had not been doing	we had not been doing
you had not been doing	you had not been doing
he (she, it) had not been doing	they had not been doing
I had not been working	we had not been working
you had not been working	you had not been working
he (she, it) had not been working	they had not been working

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή.

had I been doing?	had we been doing?
had you been doing?	had you been doing?
had he (she, it) been doing?	had they been doing?
had I been working?	had we been working?
had you been working?	had you been working?
had he (she, it) been working?	had they been working?

4) 'Αρνητικο - έρωτηματική μορφή.

had I not been doing?	had we not been doing?
had you not been doing?	had you not been doing?
had he (she, it) not been doing?	had they not been doing?
had I not been working?	had we not been working?
had you not been working?	had you not been working?
had he (she, it) not been working?	had they not been working?

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ PAST PERFECT

ΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ SIMPLE PAST PERFECT

Ὁ *Simple Past Perfect* χρησιμοποιεῖται ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια ἢ ὁποία ἔχει τελειώσει στὸ παρελθὸν πρὶν ἀπὸ ὠρισμένη χρονικὴ στιγμή ἢ χρονικὴ περίοδο, ἢ πρὶν ἀπὸ ὠρισμένη ἄλλη ἐνέργεια ἢ ὁποία ἐπακολουθεῖ.

Παραδείγματα.

I had left home, when my friend came at six o'clock. (Εἶχα ἀναχωρήσει ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι, ὅταν ὁ φίλος μου ἦλθε στὶς 6 ἡ ὥρα.)

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν *Simple Past Perfect* (*I had left*) γιὰτὶ ἡ ἐνέργεια (ἡ ἀναχώρησις ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι) ἔγινε στὸ παρελθὸν πρὶν ἀπὸ μιὰ ὠρισμένη χρονικὴ στιγμή (πρὶν ἀπὸ τὶς 6.) Ἡ ἀναχώρησις τουτέστι προηγήθηκε ἀπὸ τὸν ἐρχομὸ τοῦ φίλου. Ἄν ὅμως ὁ ἐρχομὸς τοῦ φίλου συνέπιπτε χρονικῶς μὲ τὴν ἀναχώρησι ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι, τότε ἀντὶ τοῦ *Simple Past Perfect* θὰ χρησιμοποιούσαμε τὸν *Simple Past* ἤτοι: When my friend came at six o'clock, *I left* home.

— *They had finished* playing cards by the time we arrived. (Εἶχαν τελειώσει νὰ παίζουν χαρτιά, ὅταν φθάσαμε).

By 1940 Germany *had conquered* nearly the whole of Europe. (Ἔως τὸ 1940 ἡ Γερμανία εἶχε κατακτήσει σχεδὸν ὅλὸκληρον τὴν Εὐρώπην).

Παρατηρήσεις:

Ὅταν, προκειμένον νὰ δείξωμεν, ὅτι μιὰ ἐνέργεια ἔχει τελειώσει στὸ παρελθὸν πρὶν ἀπὸ ὠρισμένο χρόνον ἢ πρὶν ἀπὸ ὠρισμένη ἄλλη ἐνέργεια, χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴ λέξι *before*, τότε μποροῦμε νὰ χρησιμοποιήσωμε τὸν *Simple Past*, χωρὶς ν' ἀποκλείεται καὶ ἡ χρῆ-

σις τοῦ *Simple Past Perfect*, ὅπως π.χ. στὸ παράδειγμα: *He left home before I arrived*, τὸ ὁποῖον ἐπίσης μπορούμε ν' ἀποδώσουμε καὶ μὲ *Simple Past Perfect*, ἥτοι: *He had left home before I arrived*.

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ CONTINUOUS PAST PERFECT

Ὁ *Continuous Past Perfect* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια ἢ ὁποία ἔγινε στὸ παρελθόν, διήρκησεν ἐπὶ ὠρισμένο χρονικὸ διάστημα πρὶν ἀπὸ ὠρισμένο χρόνον καὶ συνεχίζετο κατὰ τὸν ὠρισμένο αὐτὸν χρόνον.

Παράδειγματα:

—When he came at 7 o'clock, *I had been working* for an hour. (Ὅταν ἦλθε στὶς 7, εἶχα ἐργασθῇ ἐπὶ μίαν ὥραν).

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν *Continuous Past Perfect* (*I had been working*) διότι ἡ ἐνέργεια (ἐργασία) ἔγινε στὸ παρελθόν ἐπὶ ὠρισμένο χρονικὸ διάστημα (*for an hour*), πρὶν ἀπὸ ὠρισμένο χρόνον (πρὶν ἀπὸ τὴν 7) καὶ συνεχίζετο κατὰ τὸν χρόνον αὐτὸν (στὶς 7).

Ἄν ὅμως ἡ ἐργασία τῆς μιᾶς ὥρας εἶχε γίνῃ πρὸ τῆς 7ης ὥρας (π.χ. ἀπὸ 3-4 ἢ 4-5 κλπ.) καὶ ἐπομένως δὲν συνεχίζετο τὴν 7ην τότε τὸ ῥῆμα τῆς προτάσεως θ' ἀποδοθῇ μὲ τὸν *Simple Past Perfect*, ἥτοι: When he came at 7 o'clock *I had worked* for an hour.

—When he looked at the clock he saw that *he had been studying* for three hours. (Ὅταν κύτταξε τὸ ὥρολόγι εἶδε πὼς εἶχεν ἤδη μελετήσῃ ἐπὶ 3 ὥρας).

When I entered the lecture hall the speaker *had been speaking* for half an hour. (Ὅταν μπῆκα στὴν αἴθουσα διαλέξεων ὁ ρήτωρ εἶχεν ἤδη ὁμιλήσῃ ἐπὶ μισῇ ὥρᾳ).

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ VI

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΟΥ PAST PERFECT

**A. Put in the correct tense: a) Past (Simple or Continuous),
b) Past Perfect, (Simple or Continuous).**

1. Yesterday evening I (to go) to pay the tailor for the suit he (to make) me. 2. It (to rain) very heavily, when I (to leave) the office but luckily I (to bring) my raincoat with me in the morning. 3. After we (to walk) for about an hour, we (to understand) that we (to take) the wrong road. 4. I (to arrive) at the football ground very late. The game (to begin) and the home team already (to score) two goals. 5. When he (to arrive) I still (not to finish) the work. 6. When the reinforcements (to arrive) it was too late. The enemy (to break through) the front and all the attempts to drive them back (to fail). 7. The invention of the steam engine (to come) as a great surprise to many people who (never to believe) such a thing possible. 8. When the police (to catch) the thief, he (to dispose) of his loot. 9. When I (to ask) my son, he (to assure) me that he (to search) for two hours, but he (can not) find my book. 10. I (to go) to the tailors' yesterday to pick up a pair of trousers I (to order), but I (to find) that he (to make) the trouser leg too short. 11. He (to speak) for half an hour when a young man with spectacles, who (to stand) near him (to interrupt) him. 12. Last Sunday I (to tell) my son to clean up the vegetable patch, but an hour later, when I (to go), to see how he (to get on), I (to find) that he (not only to dig up) the weeds, but also (to remove) some of the vegetables too. 13. We (to do) our best to save them, but when we (to reach) the spot, the boat (to disappear) and the members of the crew who (to manage) to jump into the

water (to carry away) by the current. 14. When I (to read) the newspaper I (to see) that my lottery ticket (to win) ten million drs. 15. When I (to ask) him what he (to do) with the book which I (to lend) him, he (to refuse) to answer me.

B. Translate into English.

1. Όταν τὸ περασμένο καλοκαίρι συνάντησα τὸ φίλο μου στὸ Λονδὶνο μου εἶπε πὼς ἤξερε πολὺ καλὰ τὴν πόλι γιατί ἔζησε σ' αὐτὴ τρία ὁλόκληρα χρόνια. 2. Όταν ἔφθασα στὸ Παρίσι δυσκολευόμουν νὰ πιστέψω πὼς μόλις ἀπὸ 4 ὥρῶν ἄφισα τὴν Ἑλλάδα. 3. Όταν χθὲς βράδν γύρισα στὸ ξενοδοχεῖο καὶ μέτρησα τὰ χρήματά μου εἶδα πὼς ὅλη τὴ χθεσινὴ ἡμέρα ξόδευσα περισσότερα ἀπὸ δύο ἑκατομμύρια δραχμές. 4. Ὁ γυιὸς μου μου εἶπε τὴν περασμένη Κυριακὴ πὼς ἀποφάσισε νὰ μάθῃ Ἀγγλικά, καὶ πὼς ἄρχισε τὰ μαθήματα πρὸ 15 ἡμερῶν. 5. Όταν τὸν ρώτησα γιατί ταξίδευε δευτέρα θέσι κι ὄχι τρίτη, ἀφοῦ, καθὼς ἔλεγε, δὲν εἶχε πολλὰ λεφτά, μ' ἀπήντησε πὼς ἀπέφυγε νὰ ταξιδεύσῃ τρίτη θέσι γιὰ μὴ συναντήσῃ τοὺς πιστωτάς του. 6. Κατὰ τὴν κατοχὴ ὁ κόσμος ὑπέφερε παραπολύ. Όταν ἦλθε ὁ χειμῶνας τοῦ 1941 ὅλα σχεδὸν τὰ τρόφιμα εἶχαν ἤδη ἐξαφανισθῇ καὶ ἡ μαύρη ἀγορὰ ὀργίαζε. 7. Ὁ ἀδελθός μου γύρισε χθὲς ἀπὸ τὸ ταξεῖδι πού ἔκανε στὴν Εὐρώπη καὶ μου διηγήθηκε πολλὰ ἐνδιαφέροντα πράγματα πού εἶδε, ιδίως στὸ Παρίσι καὶ στὸ Λονδίνο. 8. Όταν συνάντησα τὸν ἀδελφό σου στὸ Παρίσι μου εἶπε πὼς ἐπὶ ἓνα μῆνα διασκέδαζε σχεδὸν μέρα—νύχτα καὶ ὅτι αἰσθανότανε τὸν ἑαυτό του τόσο κουρασμένο, ὥστε τοῦ ἦταν πολὺ δύσκολο νὰ μὲ συντροφεύσῃ στὰ νυκτερινὰ κέντρα. 9. Ἀφοῦ φύγατε ἀπὸ τὸ σπίτι μετὰ πέντε λεπτά τῆς ὥρας ἦλθε ἓνα τηλεγράφημα. 10. Όταν ἔφθασα σπῖτι χθὲς βράδν ἡ γυναίκα μου μου εἶπε πὼς τὰ παιδιὰ ἔπαιζαν ὅλο τὸ ἀπόγευμα, κουράστηκαν καὶ κοιμήθηκαν ἑνωρῆς. 11. Όταν γιὰ πρώτη φορὰ ἐπισκέφθηκα τὸ 1945 τὰς Ἀθήνας θέλησα νὰ γνωρίσω τὰ κέντρικά της μέρη γυρνώντας τοὺς δρόμους πεζός, Στὴν ἀρχή, ἀφοῦ περπάτησα ἐπὶ μία ὥρα περίπου, εἶδα πὼς βρέθηκα καὶ πάλι στὸ ἀρχικὸ σημεῖο ἐκκινήσεως. 12. Ἐως τὸ 1950 εἰργάσθηκα σ' αὐτὴ τὴ δουλειὰ ἐπὶ δεκαπέντε χρόνια.

E. FUTURE TENSE

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΛΙΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ FUTURE TENSE

SIMPLE FUTURE

Ὁ *Simple Future* ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων, κατ' ἀρχὴν σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχὴ μορφή τῶν βοηθητικῶν ρημάτων *shall* (γιά τὸ πρῶτο πρόσωπο ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ) καὶ *will* (γιά τὰ λοιπὰ πρόσωπα) καὶ τὸ *Infinitive* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Simple Future* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to work*.

1. Καταφατικὴ μορφή

Singular

I	shall	be	I	shall	work
you	will	be	you	will	work
he (she, it)	will	be	he (she, it)	will	work

Plural

we	shall	be	we	shall	work
you	will	be	you	will	work
they	will	be	they	will	work

2. Ἀρνητική μορφή

Singular

I	shall not be	I	shall not work
you	will not be	you	will not work
he (she, it)	will not be	he (she, it)	will not work

Plural

we	shall not be	we	shall not work
you	will not be	you	will not work
they	will not be	they	will not work

3. Ἑρωτηματική μορφή

Singular

shall I	be?	shall I	work?
will you	be?	will you	work?
will he (she, it)	be?	will he (she, it)	work?

Plural

shall we	be?	shall we	work?
will you	be?	will you	work?
will they	be?	will they	work?

4. Ἀρνητικο-ἑρωτηματική μορφή

Singular

shall I	not be?	shall I	not work?
will you	not be?	will you	not work?
will he (she, it)	not be?	will he (she, it)	not work?

Plural

shall we	not be?	shall we	not work?
will you	not be?	will you	not work?
will they	not be?	will they	not work?

CONTINUOUS FUTURE

Ὁ *Continuous Future* ὅλων τῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του μετὰ τὴν ἀντίστοιχὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Future* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* καὶ τὴν *Present Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Continuous Future* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to work*.

1. Καταφατικὴ μορφή.

Singular

	shall be doing	I	shall be working
you	will be doing	you	will be working
he (she, it)	will be doing	he (she, it)	will be working

Plural

we	shall be doing	we	shall be working
you	will be doing	you	will be working
they	will be doing	they	will be working

2) Ἀρνητικὴ μορφή.

Singular

I	shall not be doing	I	shall not be working
you	will not be doing	you	will not be working
he (she, it)	will not be doing	he (she, it)	will not be working

Plural

we	shall not be doing	we	shall not be working
you	will not be doing	you	will not be working
they	will not be doing	they	will not be working

3) Ἑρωτηματικὴ μορφή.

Singular

shall I	be doing?	shall I	be working?
will you	be doing?	will you	be working?
will he (she, it)	be doing?	will he (she, it)	be working?

Plural

shall we	be doing?	shall we	be working?
will you	be doing?	will you	be working?
will they	be doing?	will they	be working?

4. Ἀρνητικο-ἑρωτηματικὴ μορφή.

Singular

shall I	not be doing?	shall I	not be working?
will you	not be doing?	will you	not be working?
will he (she, it)	not be doing?	will he (she, it)	not be working?

Plural

shall we	not be doing?	shall we	not be working?
will you	not be doing?	will you	not be working?
will they	not be doing?	will they	not be working?

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ FUTURE TENSE

1. Κατ' ἀρχὴν χρησιμοποιοῦμεν τὸν *Simple Future*, ὅταν πρόκειται νὰ δειξωμεν. ὅτι μία ἐνέργεια θὰ γίνη εἰς τὸ μέλλον, καὶ τὸν *Continuous Future*, ὅταν κρύκεται νὰ δειξωμεν, ὅτι μία ἐνέργεια θὰ ἐξακολουθῇ νὰ γίνεται σὲ μιὰ δεδομένη μελλοντικὴ στιγμή ἢ χρονικὴ περίοδο.

α) Παραδείγματα χρήσεως τοῦ *Simple Future*.

—Tomorrow *I shall go* to Larissa. (Αὔριο θὰ πάω στὴ Λάρισα.

—*I shall wait* for you this afternoon in (at) my office. (Θὰ σὰς περιμένω τὸ ἀπόγευμα στὸ γραφεῖο μου).

—*We shall hear* about it tomorrow. (Θ' ἀκούσωμε γι' αὐτὸ αὔριο).

β) Παραδείγματα χρήσεως τοῦ *Continuous Future*.

—At ten o'clock in the evening my daughter *will be studying* her lessons. (Στις 10 τὸ βράδυ ἡ κόρη μου θὰ μελετᾷ τὰ μαθήματά της).

—Next month *I will be travelling* in various countries of Europe. (Τὸν προσεχῇ μῆνα θὰ ταξιδεύω σὲ διάφορες χῶρες τῆς Εὐρώπης).

—At 8 o'clock tomorrow morning my father *will be working* in the garden. (Αὔριο τὸ πρωῒ στὶς 8 ὁ πατέρας μου θὰ ἐργάζεται στὸν κήπο).

2. Ὄταν πρόκειται μὲ μιὰ μελλοντικὴ ἐνέργεια νὰ ἐκδηλώσωμεν ἀμετάτρεπτη ἀπόφασι. ὑποχρέωσι. συγκατάθεσι, προσφορά, πρόθεσι ἢ ὑπόσχεσι, τότε ἀντὶ τοῦ *shall* στὸ ἀ' πρόσωπο ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ καὶ τοῦ *will* στὰ λοιπὰ πρόσωπα δυνάμεθα νὰ χρησιμοποιήσωμεν ἀντιθέτως τὸ *will* στὸ πρῶτο πρόσωπο τοῦ ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ καὶ τὸ *shall* στὰ λοιπὰ πρόσωπα.

Στὸν προφορικὸ λόγο σπανίως γίνεται χεῖσις τοῦ *shall* ἀντὶ τοῦ *will* καὶ τοῦ *will* ἀντὶ τοῦ *shall*.

Παραδείγματα.

—*I will introduce* you to him as soon as he comes. (Θὰ σὰς παρουσιάσω σ' αὐτὸν μόλις ἔλθῃ). Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ ὁ *Future «I will introduce»* μὲ χρῆσι τοῦ *will* ἀντὶ τοῦ *shall* στὸ ἀ' πρόσωπο τοῦ ἐνικοῦ ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τῆς ὑποσχέσεως ἢ τῆς προθέσεως. Ἡ φράσις δηλαδὴ *«I will introduce you»* ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια

ταῦ: «*προτίθεμαι νὰ σᾶς παρουσιάσω*» ἢ «*ὑπόσχομαι νὰ σᾶς παρουσιάσω*»,

—This afternoon *you shall study* your lessons. (Τὸ ἀπόγευμα θὰ μελετήσετε τὰ μαθήματά σας). Ὁ *Future «you shall study»* μὲ τὸ *shall* ἀντὶ τοῦ *will* στὸ β' πρόσωπο ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τῆς «ὑποχρεώσεως», ἥτοι τοῦ: «θὰ μελετήσετε ὑποχρεωτικῶς».

—She wants to go to the cinema, but *she shall not*. (Θέλει νὰ πάη στὸν κινηματογράφον, ἀλλὰ δὲν θὰ πάη). Ὁ *Future «she shall not go»* μὲ τὸ *shall* ἀντὶ τοῦ *will* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τῆς «ἀποφάσεως». Σημαίνει δηλαδὴ ὅτι: «ἡ ἀποφασίς μου εἶναι νὰ μὴ πάη».

—*You shall have* reward if you pass the examinations. (Θὰ ἀμειφθῇτε ἂν περάσετε στὶς ἐξετάσεις). Ὁ *Future «you shall have»* μὲ τὸ *shall* ἀντὶ τοῦ *will* στὸ β' πρόσωπο ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τῆς ὑποσχέσεως, ἥτοι: «ὑπόσχομαι νὰ σᾶς ἀμείψω».

Παρατηρήσεις:

Ἡ χρησιμοποίησις τοῦ *shall* ἀντὶ τοῦ *will* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο ἐνικοῦ ἢ πληθυντικοῦ γίνεται μόνον, ὅταν ἡ θέλησις ἐκφράζεται ἀπὸ τὸν ἴδιον τὸν ὁμιλοῦντα. Ὅταν ὅμως ὁμιλοῦμε γιὰ τὴ θέλησι τρίτου προσώπου τότε χρησιμοποιοῦμε κανονικὰ τὸ *will*.

Παράδειγμα:

He shall not work this afternoon. Ὁ *Future «he shall not work»* μὲ τὸ *shall* ἀντὶ τοῦ *will* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο, ἐκφράζει τὴν θέλησι τοῦ ὁμιλοῦντος. Ἐνῶ στὸ παράδειγμα: *He has said that he will not work* this afternoon, στὸ ὁποῖον ὁμιλοῦμε γιὰ τὴ θέλησι τρίτου προσώπου γίνεται χρῆσις κανονικῶς τοῦ *will*.

3. Καθὼς ἐλέχθη στὸ κεφάλαιο γιὰ τὴν χρησιμοποίησι τοῦ *Continuous Present*, προκειμένου νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν μελλοντικὴν ἐνέργειαν χρησιμοποιοῦμεν ἐνίοτε τὸν *Continuous Present* μὲ ἔννοια Μέλ-λοντος.

4. Δὲν χρησιμοποιοῦμεν *Future Tense*, ἔστω καὶ ἂν πρόκειται γιὰ μελλοντικὴ ἐνέργεια, ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὶς λέξεις *when, if, after, as, as soon as, until, whenever, while, before, since, as long as, unless, in case*, ἔφ' ὅσον μὲ τὶς λέξεις καὶ φράσεις αὐτὰς ἐκφράζομεν προϋποθέσεις χρόνου, συνθηκῶν, κ.λ.π.

Παρατηρήσεις:

α) Μὲ τὴ λέξι *when* δὲν γίνεται χρῆσις τοῦ *Future Tense* ἔφ' ὅσον ἡ λέξις αὐτὴ ἔχει τὴ σημασίαν τοῦ «ὅταν». Ὅταν ἔχει τὴ σημασίαν τοῦ «πότε;» τότε γίνεται χρῆσις τοῦ *Simple Future*.

β) Μὲ τὴ λέξι *if* δὲν γίνεται χρῆσις τοῦ *Future Tense*, ἔφ' ὅσον μὲ τὴ λέξι αὐτὴ ἐκφράζομεν ὑπόθεσι. Ὅταν ὁμως δὲν ἐκφράζομεν ὑπόθεσι, ἀλλ' ἡ λέξις *if* εὐρίσκεται εἰς τὴν ἀρχὴ δευτερευούσης προτάσεως τῆς ὁποίας τὸ ῥῆμα ἐκφράζει μελλοντικὴν ἐνέργειαν τότε γίνεται χρῆσις τοῦ *Future Tense*.

Παραδείγματα:

When you come, (καὶ ὅχι: *you will come*), bring my book with you. (Ὅταν θὰ ἔλθῃς φέρε μαζί σου τὸ βιβλίον μου).

Ἐνῶ: *When will you bring my book?* (Πότε θὰ φέρῃς τὸ βιβλίον μου;)

— *If he comes* (καὶ ὅχι: *if he will come*), tell him to wait. (Ἐὰν θὰ ἔλθῃ εἰπέ του νὰ περιμένῃ).

Ἐνῶ: I don't know *if he will come*. (Δὲν ξέρω ἂν θὰ ἔλθῃ).

As soon as you meet (καὶ ὅχι: *you will meet*) him don't forget to ask him about my brother. (Μόλις θὰ τὸν συναντήσετε μὴ ξεχνᾶτε νὰ τὸν ἐρωτήσετε γιὰ τὸν ἀδελφόν μου).

— *As long as you are* (καὶ ὅχι: *you will be*) in London don't forget to write often to your mother. (Ὅσο καιρὸ θὰ εὐρίσκεσθε στὸ Λονδίνο μὴ ξεχνᾶτε νὰ γράφετε συχνὰ στὴ μητέρα σας).

shall have written
will have written
will have written

we
you
they

shall have done
will have done
will have done

we
you
they

ΣΤ. FUTURE PERFECT

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΑΙΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ FUTURE PERFECT

SIMPLE FUTURE PERFECT

Ἡ *Simple Future Perfect* σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχὴ μορφή τοῦ *Simple Future* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to have* καὶ τὴν *Past Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Simple Future Perfect* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to write*.

1. Καταφατικὴ μορφή.

Singular

I shall have done
you will have done
he (she, it) will have done

I shall have written
you will have written
he (she, it) will have written

Plural

we shall have done
you will have done
they will have done

we shall have written
you will have written
they will have written

3. Ἀρνητική μορφή.

Singular

I	shall not have done	I	shall not have written
you	will not have done	you	will not have written
he (she, it)	will not have done	he (she, it)	will not have written

Plural

we	shall not have done	we	shall not have written
you	will not have done	you	will not have written
they	will not have done	they	will not have written

3. Ἑρωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

shall I	have done?	shall I	have written?
will you	have done?	will you	have written?
will he (she, it)	have done?	will he (she, it)	have written?

Plural

shall we	have done?	shall we	have written?
will you	have done?	will you	have written?
will they	have done?	will they	have written?

4) Ἀρνητικο-ἑρωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

shall I	not have done?	shall I	not have written?
will you	not have done?	will you	not have written?
will he (she, it)	not have done?	will he (she, it)	not have written?

Plural

shall we	not have done?	shall we	not have written?
will you	not have done?	will you	not have written?
will they	not have done?	will they	not have written?

CONTINUOUS FUTURE PERFECT

Ὁ *Continuous Future Perfect* σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχη μορφή τοῦ *Simple Future Perfect* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* καὶ τὴν *Present Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Continuous Future Perfect* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to write*.

1. Καταφατικὴ μορφή.

Singular

I	shall have been doing	I	shall have been writing
you	will have been doing	you	will have been writing
he (she, it)	will have been doing	he (she, it)	will have been writing

Plural

we	shall have been doing	we	shall have been writing
you	will have been doing	you	will have been writing
they	will have been doing	they	will have been writing

2. Ἀρνητικὴ μορφή.

Singular

I	shall not have been doing	I	shall not have been writing
you	will not have been doing	you	will not have been writing
he	will not have been doing	he	will not have been writing
she	will not have been doing	she	will not have been writing
it	will not have been doing	it	will not have been writing

Plural

we	shall not have been doing	we	shall not have been writing
you	will not have been doing	you	will not have been writing
they	will not have been doing	they	will not have been writing

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

shall I	have been doing?	shall I	have been writing?
will you	have been doing?	will you	have been writing?
will he (she, it)	have been doing?	will he (she, it)	have been writing?

Plural

shall we	have been doing?	shall we	have been writing?
will you	have been doing?	will you	have been writing?
will they	have been doing?	will they	have been writing?

4. 'Αρνητικο-ερωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

shall I	not have been doing?	shall I	not have been writing?
will you	not have been doing?	will you	not have been writing?
will he	not have been doing?	will he	not have been writing?
will she	not have been doing?	will she	not have been writing?
will it	not have been doing?	will it	not have been writing?

Plural

shall we	not have been doing?	shall we	not have been writing?
will you	not have been doing?	will you	not have been writing?
will they	not have been doing?	will they	not have been writing?

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ FUTURE PERFECT

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ SIMPLE FUTURE PERFECT

‘Ο *Simple Future Perfect* χρησιμοποιείται, όταν πρόκειται για ενέργεια ή όποια θά ἔχη (ἢ δὲν θά ἔχη) τελειώσει στὸ μέλλον πρὶν ἀπὸ μιὰ ὀρισμένη στιγμή ἢ χρονικὴ περίοδο ἢ πρὶν ἀπὸ μιὰ ἄλλη ἐνέργεια.

Παραδείγματα:

— *I shall have finished* my work by ten o'clock. (Θά έχω τελειώσει τη δουλειά μου έως τις 10). Στο παράδειγμα χρησιμοποιούμε τον *Simple Future Perfect* (*I shall have finished*) γιατί πρόκειται για ενέργεια (δουλειά) η οποία θα έχη τελειώσει στο μέλλον πριν από ωρισμένο χρόνο (πριν από τις 10). "Αν όμως η δουλειά πρόκειται να τελειώσει ακριβώς στις 10 τότε θα χρησιμοποιήσουμε τον *Simple Future*, ήτοι: *I shall finish* my work at ten o'clock.

— I am sure that my friend *will not have come* back when we are ready to leave. (Είμαι βέβαιος πώς ο φίλος μου δεν θα έχη επιστρέψει, όταν θα είμαστε έτοιμοι ν' αναχωρήσωμεν). Καί στο παράδειγμα αυτό χρησιμοποιούμε τον *Simple Future Perfect* (*will not have come*) γιατί πρόκειται για ενέργεια (επιστροφή) η οποία δεν θα έχη τελειώσει στο μέλλον πριν από μιὰ ἄλλη ενέργεια (*when we are ready to leave*),

Παρατήρησις:

Εἰς τὴν περίπτωσιν κατὰ τὴν ὁποίαν γιὰ τὴν ἔνδειξι τῆς προτεραιότητος χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴ λέξι *before*, τότε μπορούμε, ἂντὶ τοῦ *Simple Future Perfect* νὰ χρησιμοποιήσωμε τὸν *Simple Perfect*. Ἦτοι μπορούμε νὰ ποῦμε: I am sure that my friend *will not come* back before we are ready to leave.

— By 1964 *I shall have worked* here for ten years. ("Εως τὸ 1964 θὰ έχω δουλέψει ἔδῳ ἐπὶ 10 χρόνια). Τὸ αὐτὸ παρὰδειγμα μ'ορεῖ ν' ἀποδοθῇ καὶ μὲ *Continuous Future Perfect*, ἐφ' ὅσον στὴν ἐνέργεια (δουλειά) δώσωμεν τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ «εἶμαι ὑπάλληλος ἢ ἐργάτης» σ' αὐτὴ τὴ δουλειά, ἦτοι: By 1964 *I shall have been working* here for ten years.

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ CONTINUOUS FUTURF PERFECT

Ὁ *Continuous Future Perfect* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια ἡ ὁποία μέχρις ὁρισμένης μελλοντικῆς χρονικῆς στιγ-

γμῆς ἢ περιόδου θὰ ἔχῃ διαρκέσει ἐπὶ ὠρισμένο χρονικὸ διάστημα
χωρὶς νὰ ἔχῃ τελειώσῃ εἰσέτι.

Παραδείγματα:

—*I shall have been reading* the book for an hour, when you
come. (Ὅταν θὰ ἔλθετε θὰ ἔχω διαβάσει τὸ βιβλίον ἐπὶ μία ὥρα).

—At this time tomorrow *I shall have been travelling* for
two hours by train. (Αὔριο τὴν αὐτὴν ὥρα θὰ ἔχω ταξιδεύσει σι-
δηροδρομικῶς ἐπὶ δυὸ ὥρες).

—At ten o'clock tomorrow in the morning *I shall have been*
working in the garden for three hours. (Στὶς 10 αὔριο τὸ πρωτὶ
θὰ ἔχω ἐργασθῇ στὸν κήπο ἐπὶ τρεῖς ὥρες).

Z. FUTURE IN THE PAST (OR: CONDITIONAL TENSE)

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΛΙΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ FUTURE IN THE PAST

SIMPLE FUTURE IN THE PAST

Ὁ *Simple Future in the Past* ἢ *Simple Conditional* σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφές του μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχὴ μορφή τοῦ *Past Tense* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *shall* (I should, you would, κ.λ.π.) καὶ τὸ *Infinitive* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Simple Future in the Past* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to write*.

1, Καταφατικὴ μορφή.

Singular

I	should do	I	should write
you	would do	you	would write
he (she, it)	would do	he (she, it)	would write

Plural

we	should do	we	should write
you	would do	you	would write
they	would do	they	would write

2) 'Αρνητική μορφή.

Singular

I	should not do	I	should not write
you	would not do	you	would not write
he (she, it)	would not do	he (she, it)	would not write

Plural

we	should not do	we	should not write
you	would not do	you	would not write
they	would not do	they	would not write

3) 'Ερωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

should I	do?	should I	write?
would you	do?	would you	write?
would he (she, it)	do?	would he (she, it)	write?

Plural

should we	do?	should we	write?
would you	do?	would you	write?
would they	do?	would they	write?

4. 'Αρνητικο - έρωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

should I	not do?	should we	not write?
would you	not do?	would you	not write?
would he (she, it)	not do?	would they	not write?

Plural

should we	not do?	should we	not write?
would you	not do?	would you	not write?
would they	not do?	would they	not write?

CONTINUOUS FUTURE IN THE PAST

Ὁ *Continuous Future in the Past* σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τις μορφές μετὰ τὴν ἀντίστοιχῃ μορφῇ τοῦ *Simple Future in the Past* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* (I should be, you would be, κλπ.) καὶ τὴν *Present Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Continuous Future in the Past* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to write*

1. Καταφατικὴ μορφή.

Singular

I	should be doing	I	should be writing
you	would be doing	you	would be writing
he (she, it)	would be doing	he (she, it)	would be writing

Plural

we	should be doing	we	should be writing
you	would be doing	you	would be writing
they	would be doing	they	would be writing

2. Ἀρνητικὴ μορφή.

Singular

I	should not be doing	I	should not be writing
you	would not be doing	you	would not be writing
he (she, it)	would not be doing	he (she, it)	would not be writing

Plural

we	should not be doing	we	should not be writing
you	would not be doing	you	would not be writing
they	would not be doing	they	would not be writing

3. Ἑρωτηματικὴ μορφή

Singular

should I	be doing?	should I	be writing?
would you	be doing?	would you	be writing?
would he (she, it)	be doing?	would he (she, it)	be writing?

Plural

should we	be doing?	should we	be writing?
would you	be doing?	would you	be writing?
would they	be doing?	would they	be writing?

4. Ἀρνητικο-ἑρωτηματικὴ μορφή

Singular

should I	not be doing?	should I	not be writing?
would you	not be doing?	would you	not be writing?
would he (she, it)	not be doing?	would he (she, it)	not be writing?

Plural

should we	not be doing?	should we	not be writing?
would you	not be doing?	would you	not be writing?
would they	not be doing?	would they	not be writing?

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ FUTURE IN THE PAST

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ SIMPLE FUTURE IN THE PAST

Ὁ *Simple Future in the Past* (ἢ *Simple Conditional*) χρησιμοποιεῖται ὅταν πρόκειται περὶ ἐνεργείας ἢ ὁποῖα θὰ ἦτο δυνατόν νὰ πραγματοποιηθῇ στὸ παρὸν ἢ στὸ μέλλον ὑπὸ ὥρισμένην προϋπόθεσιν, ἢ ὑποῖα ὁμῶς εἶναι ἀπραγματοποίητη.

Παραδείγματα:

I should help you now, if I had time. (Θὰ σᾶς βοηθοῦσα—τώρα—ἂν εἶχα καιρό). Στὸ παράδειγμα χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν Simple Future in the Past (*I should help you*), γιατί ἡ ἐκφραζομένη ἐνέργεια (ἡ βοήθεια) θὰ ἦτο δυνατόν νὰ πραγματοποιηθῇ στὸ παρὸν (*now*) ὑπὸ ὠρισμένην προϋπόθεσιν (*if I had time*), ἡ ὁποία ὅμως εἶναι ἀπραγματοποίητη (γιατὶ δὲν ἔχω καιρό).

Γιὰ τὸν ἴδιον λόγον χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν Simple Future in the Past καὶ στὰ ἐπόμενα παραδείγματα.

I should go to the concert tomorrow, if I had not an appointment. (Θὰ πῆγαίνα αὔριο στὸ κονσέρτο, ἂν δὲν εἶχα ραντεβού).

Your son *would be* a better student, if he studied more. (Ὁ γιὸς σας θὰ ἦτο καλύτερος μαθητής, ἂν μελετοῦσε περισσότερο).

They would come to see us, if you asked them. (Θὰ ἦρχοντο νὰ μᾶς ἰδοῦν ἂν τοὺς ἐκαλούσατε).

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ CONTINUOUS FUTURE IN THE PAST

Ὁ Continuous Future in the Past χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν πρόκειται γιὰ ἐνέργεια ἡ ὁποία θὰ εἶχεν ἀρχίσει στὸ παρελθὸν καὶ θὰ συνεχίζετο στὸ παρὸν ὑπὸ ὠρισμένην προϋπόθεσιν, ἡ ὁποία ὅμως δὲν εἶναι δυνατόν νὰ πραγματοποιηθῇ.

Παραδείγματα:

We should [be playing] cards now, if our neighbours had not come. (Θὰ παίζαμε τώρα χαρτιά, ἂν δὲν εἶχαν ἔλθει οἱ γείτονές μας).

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμεν τὸν Continuous Future in the Past (*We should be playing*) γιατί πρόκειται περὶ ἐνεργείας (παίξιμο χαρτιῶν) ἡ ὁποία θὰ εἶχεν ἀρχίσει καὶ θὰ συνεχίζε-

το τώρα (στο παρόν) ὑπὸ ὠρισμένην προϋπόθεσιν (*if our neighbours had not come*), ἢ ὁποία ὅμως δὲν εἶναι δυνατόν νὰ πραγματοποιηθῇ. (Διότι οἱ γείτονές μας ἔχουν ἤδη ἔλθει).

Γιὰ τὸν ἴδιο λόγο χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν *Continuous Future in the Past* καὶ στὰ ἐπόμενα παραδείγματα.

I should be working in the garden now, if it were not raining. (Θὰ δούλευα τώρα στὸν κῆπο, ἂν δὲν ἔβρεχε).

He would still be living there, if the war had not obliged him to leave. (Θὰ κατοικοῦσε ἀκόμα ἐκεῖ, ἂν δὲν τὸν ἠνάγκαζε ὁ πόλεμος νὰ φύγῃ).

She would be travelling by train at this moment, if she had wakened earlier. (Θὰ ταξίδευε μὲ τὸ τραῖνο αὐτὴ τῇ στιγμῇ, ἂν ξυπνοῦσε ἐνωρίτερα).

H. FUTURE PERFECT IN THE PAST

(OR: CONDITIONAL PERFECT)

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΛΙΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ FUTURE PERFECT IN THE PAST

SIMPLE FUTURE PERFECT IN THE PAST

‘Ο *Simple Future Perfect in the Past* (ἢ *Simple Conditional Perfect*) σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σὲ ὅλες τὶς μορφὰς μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχη μορφή τοῦ *Simple Future in the Past* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to have* (I should have, κλπ.) καὶ τὴν *Past Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Simple Future Perfect in the Past* τῶν ρηματικῶν *to do* καὶ *to speak*.

1. Καταφατικὴ μορφή.

Singular		Plural	
I	should have done	we	should have done
you	would have done	you	would have done
he (she, it)	would have done	they	would have done
I	should have spoken	we	should have spoken
you	would have spoken	you	would have spoken
he (she, it)	would have spoken	they	would have spoken

2. 'Αρνητική μορφή

Singular

Plural

I should not have done
you would not have done
he (she, it) would not have done

we should not have done
you would not have done
they would not have done

I should not have spoken
you would not have spoken
he (she, it) would not have spoken

we should not have spoken
you would not have spoken
they would not have spoken

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

Plural

should I have done?
would you have done?
would he (she, it) have done?

should we have done?
would you have done?
would they have done?

should I have spoken?
would you have spoken?
would he (she, it) have spoken?

should we have spoken?
would you have spoken?
would they have spoken?

4) 'Αρνητικο-έρωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

Plural

should I not have done?
would you not have done?
would he (she, it) not have done?

should we not have done?
would you not have done?
would they not have done?

should I not have spoken?
would you not have spoken?
would he (she, it) not have spoken?

should we not have spoken?
would you not have spoken?
would they not have spoken?

CONTINUOUS FUTURE PERFECT IN THE PAST

‘Ο *Continuous Future Perfect in the Past* σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται σέ ὅλες τὶς μορφὰς μὲ τὴν ἀντίστοιχη μορφή τοῦ *Simple Future Perfect in the Past* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* (I should have been, κλπ.) καὶ τὴν Past Participle τοῦ ρήματος.

Παδείγματα:

Κλίσις τοῦ *Continuous Future Perfect in the Past* τῶν ρημάτων *to do* καὶ *to speak*.

1. Καταφατική μορφή

Singular

I should have been doing
you would have been doing
he would have been doing
she would have been doing
it would have been doing

I should have been speaking
you would have been speaking
he would have been speaking
she would have been speaking
it would have been speaking

Plural

we should have been doing
you would have been doing
they would have been doing

we should have been speaking
you would have been speaking
they would have been speaking

2. Ἀρνητική μορφή.

Singular

I should not have been doing
you would not have been doing
he would not have been doing
she would not have been doing
it would not have been doing

I should not have been speaking
you would not have been speaking
he would not have been speaking
she would not have been speaking
it would not have been speaking

Plural

we should not have been doing	we should not have been speaking
you would not have been doing	you would not have been speaking
they would not have been doing	they would not have been speaking

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

should I have been doing?	should I have been speaking?
would you have been doing?	would you have been speaking?
would he have been doing?	would he have been speaking?
would she have been doing?	would she have been speaking?
would it have been doing?	would it have been speaking?

Plural

should we have been doing?	should we have been speaking?
would you have been doing?	would you have been speaking?
would they have been doing?	would they have been speaking?

4. 'Αρνητικο - ἐρωτηματική μορφή.

Singular

should I not have been doing?	should I not have been speaking?
would you not have been doing?	would you not have been speaking?
would he not have been doing?	would he not have been speaking?
would she not have been doing?	would she not have been speaking?
would it not have been doing?	would it not have been speaking?

Plural

should we not have been doing?	should we not have been speaking?
would you not have been doing?	would you not have been speaking?
would they not have been doing?	would they not have been speaking?

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ FUTURE PERFECT IN THE PAST

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ SIMPLE FUTURE PERFECT IN THE PAST

‘Ο *Simple Future Perfect in the Past* χρησιμοποιείται, για ενέργεια ή όποια θά είχε γίνει στο παρελθόν, αν δὲν ἐμεσολάβη προϋπόθεσις ἀπραγματοποίητη.

Παραδείγματα:

— *He would have succeeded*, if I had helped him. (Θὰ εἶχε ἐπιτύχει ἂν τὸν εἶχα βοηθήσει).

— *We should have bought* the house, if it had not been so expensive. (Θὰ εἶχαμε ἀγοράσει τὸ σπίτι, ἂν δὲν ἦτο τόσο ἀκριβό).

— My son *would have passed* the examination, if he had studied. (‘Ο γυιὸς μου θὰ εἶχε περάσει στὶς ἐξετάσεις, ἂν εἶχε μελετήσει).

— If he had been more careful, the accident *would not have happened*. (“Αν ἦτο πὺρ προσεκτικὸς τὸ ἀτύχημα δὲν θὰ εἶχε συμβῇ).

— If you had come five minutes earlier *you would have seen* him. (“Αν εἶχατε ἔλθει πέντε λεπτὰ ἑνωρίτερα, θὰ τὸν εἶχατε ἰδῇ).

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ CONTINUOUS FUTURE PERFECT
IN THE PAST

‘Ο *Continuous F. P. in the Past* χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν πρόκειται γὰρ ἐνέργεια ἢ όποια ὑπὸ ὠρισμένην προϋπόθεσιν, θὰ συνεχίζετο εἰς δεδομένην στιγμήν τοῦ παρελθόντος.

Παραδείγματα:

— At two o'clock this morning *I should still have been*

studying, if I had not had a headache. (Στις 2 ή ώρα σήμερα το πρωί θά μελετούσα ακόμη, αν δεν είχα πονοκέφαλο).

— *He would have been driving*, when the accident happened if I had not forbidden him to do so. (Θά οδηγούσε αυτός, όταν συνέβη το ατύχημα, αν δεν τον είχα απαγορεύσει να το κάνει).

— If you had told me the truth yesterday *I shouldn't have punished you*. (Αν μου είχατε ειπεί χθες την αλήθεια δεν θά σ'α είχα τιμωρήσει).

Παρατηρήσεις:

α) Ὑστερα ἀπὸ τὶς ἀπρόσωπες φράσεις: *it is natural that...*, *it is important that...*, *it is essential that...*, *it is strange that...*, κλπ. ἀκολουθεῖ *Future in the Past (Conditional Perfect)* μὲ τὸ *should* σὲ ὅλα ἀνεξαιρέτως τὰ πρόσωπα ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ.

Παραδείγματα:

— It is natural that *he should know English*.

— It is essential that *they should take* more care.

— It is strange that *he should have come* to me for help.

β) Στὴ σύγχρονη Ἀγγλικὴ συνειθίζεται ἡ χρῆσις τοῦ *should* γιὰ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα τοῦ *Future in the Past* καὶ τοῦ *Future Perfect in the Past* μὲ τὴ σημασίαν τοῦ «*ought to*» (ὀφείλω).

Παραδείγματα:

— *You should have studied (You ought to have studied)* more, when you had the opportunity. (Ὄφειλάτε νὰ ἔμελετούσατε περισσότερο, ὅταν εἴχατε τὴν εὐκαιρία).

— *He should not smoke (He ought not to smoke)* so many cigarettes. (Δὲν θά ἔπρεπε νὰ καπνίζῃ τόσα πολλὰ σιγαρέττα).

— *We should be working (We ought to be working)* now, but

there is no electricity. (Έπρεπε νά δουλεύουμε τώρα ἀλλὰ δὲν ὑπάρχει ἡλεκτρικό).

γ) Τὸ *would* χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ σὲ φράσεις ποὺ ἐκφράζουν εὐγενικὴ παράκλησι.

Παραδείγματα:

—Would you be kind enough to assist me?

—Would they like to come to tea tomorrow?

—Would you come and see me this afternoon?

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ VII

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΩΝ

a) FUTURE PERFECT, b) FUTURE IN THE PAST, καὶ

c) FUTURE PERFECT IN THE PAST

A. Put in the correct Tense in the following sentences.

1. It is a pity you did not come. You (*to like*) the film. 2. If I had money, I (*to buy*) that house. 3. By the time you arrive, I (*to finish*) reading the book you lent me. 4. If I had a car we (*to go*) on an excursion every Sunday. 5. I (*to be*) in this town three years next June. 6. If he hasn't begun to work yet, he certainly (*not to finish*) his work by tomorrow. 7. If the Germans had invaded England in 1940, the war (*to finish*) differently. 8. Before I leave Athens, I (*to visit*) all the curio-

sities of the town. 9. If you paid a little more attention to my advice you (*to be*) more successful in your work. 10. I (*to write*) more often, if I didn't have examinations in June, but as you can understand I'm busy studying. 11. If he knew English, I (*to give*) him a job in my office. 12. I hope that by this time next month I (*to see*) you again. 13. If we hadn't helped him he (*never to finish*) the job before Christmas last year. 14. If you had come yesterday, I (*to lend*) you the money. 15. If I were you, I (*to go*) to meet him.

B. Translate into English.

Στις 30 'Ιουνίου θὰ εἴμεθα 30 χρόνια παντρεμένοι. 2. Ἄν δὲν ἔβρεχε χθὲς βράδυ θὰ ἤρχεσο σπίτι μου; 3. Θὰ φοβόσουν, ἂν αὐτὴ τὴ στιγμή ἔσβυναν τὰ φῶτα κι' ἓνας κλέπτης ἔμπαινε σπίτι; 4. Τὶ θὰ κάνατε χθὲς βράδυ ἂν βρισκόσασθε στὴ θέσι μου; 5. Ἔως ὅτου ἔλθῃ ὁ φίλος μου θὰ ἔχω τελειώσει τὴ δουλειά μου. 6. Ἄν χθὲς βράδυ ὁ γιατρός ἔφθανεν ἐγκαίρως, ἴσως ὁ ἄρρωστος νὰ μὴ πέθαινε. 7. Ἄν πρόσεχες δὲν θὰ ἔκανες αὐτὸ τὸ λάθος. 8. Ἄν δὲν ἔβρεχε οἱ ἐργάτες θὰ δούλευαν ἀκόμη στὸ δρόμο. 9. Ἄν δὲν τὸ ἔβλεπα μὲ τὰ μάτια μου δὲν θὰ τὸ πίστευα. 10. Μέχρι τοῦ προσεχοῦς 'Ιουνίου θὰ ἔχωμεν ἐπισκεφθῇ τὶς κυριώτερες πόλεις τῆς Ἑλλάδος. 11. Ἄν σὰς ἐδίδετο ἡ εὐκαιρία θὰ πηγαίνατε στὴν Ἀμερική; 12. Θὰ τὸν περιμένα ἐδῶ. ἂν δὲν ἤμουν ἀναγκασμένος νὰ φύγω ἀμέσως γιὰ τὸ γραφεῖο μου. 13. Ὑστερα ἀπὸ λίγο καιρὸ θὰ ἔχετε ξεχάσει τὶς τωρινὲς γνωριμίες σας. 14. Θὰ εἰδοποιούσα τώρα ἀμέσως τὴν Ἀστυνομία, ἂν εἶχα τηλέφωνο. 15. Τοῦ χρόνου σὰν σήμερα ἐλπίζω ἡ διεθνὴς κατάστασις νὰ ἔχῃ καλυτερεύσει.

II. SUBJUNCTIVE — ΥΠΟΤΑΚΤΙΚΗ

A. ΓΕΝΙΚΑ

Ἡ *Subjunctive* εἶνε ἔγκλισις (Mood) τοῦ ρήματος. Μὲ τὴν *Subjunctive* ἐκφράζομεν κυρίως ὑπόθεσιν, εὐχὴν, ἢ συγκατάθεσιν.

Στὴν σύγχρονον Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα ἡ *Subjunctive*, ὡς ξεχωριστὸς τύπος τοῦ ρήματος, ἔχει σχεδὸν ἐκλείψει. Ὡς ξεχωριστὸς τύπος διατηρεῖται: α) Στὸ πρῶτο καὶ τρίτο πρόσωπο τοῦ ἐνικοῦ τοῦ Past Tense τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος to be (*I were, he were*), καὶ β) Στὸ τρίτο πρόσωπο τοῦ ἐνικοῦ τοῦ Simple Present Tense, ὅπου τὸ ρῆμα σχηματίζεται μὲ τὴν προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία (*he, she, it*) καὶ τὸν τύπο τοῦ ἀπαρεμφάτου αὐτοῦ χωρὶς τὸ to (*he take, he be*).

Τὸ ὅτι ὁμοῦς ἡ *Subjunctive* δὲν ὑφίσταται σχεδὸν στὴν σύγχρονον Ἀγγλική, ὡς τελείως ξεχωριστὸς τύπος τοῦ ρήματος, δὲν σημαίνει, ὅτι ἔχει ἐκλείψει καὶ ἡ χρῆσις τῆς ὡς ἐγκλίσεως. Τοῦναντίον χρησιμοποιεῖται, καθὼς θὰ ἰδοῦμε, σὲ πολλὰς περιπτώσεις. Μὲ τὴ διαφορὰ, ὅτι ὅπου δὲν ὑπάρχει ξεχωριστὸς τύπος τοῦ χρόνου τοῦ ρήματος στὴν *Subjunctive*, γίνεται χρῆσις τοῦ ἀντιστοίχου τύπου τῆς *Indicative mood* (Ὁριστικῆς).

Στὴν πρότασι π.χ. «*If he were rich, he would help me*», ἡ φράσις «*If he were rich*» ἐκφράζει ὑπόθεσιν (ἀπραγματοποίητη) καὶ τὸ ρῆμα «*he were*» ἔχει σαφῶς ξεχωριστὸν τύπο τῆς *Subjunctive*. Ἀλλὰ καὶ στὴν πρότασι: «*If he had been rich, he would have helped me*» ἡ φράσις «*If he had been rich*» ἐκφράζει ἐπίσης ὑπόθεσιν (ἀπραγματοποίητη) καὶ τὸ «*If he had been*» εἶναι *Subjunctive Mood* μὲ τὴ διαφορὰ, ὅτι τὸ ρῆμα «*he had been*» ἔχει τὸν τύπο τοῦ Paste Perfect τῆς *Indicative Mood* (Ὁριστικῆς).

B. ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΗΣ SUBJUNCTIVE

1. Ἡ *Subjunctive* χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ὑποθετικὰς προτάσεις μὲ τὴ λέξι *if* καὶ ἐφ' ὅσον ἡ πρότασις ἐκφράζει ὑπόθεσιν ἢ ὁποία

δέν μπορεί νά πραγματοποιηθῇ στο παρόν ἢ δέν ἔχει ἤδη πραγματο-
ποιηθῇ στο παρελθόν.

Στὴν περίπτωσιν ὑποθέσεως ποὺ δέν μπορεί νά πραγματοποιη-
θῇ στο παρόν, χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν *Past Tense* τοῦ ρήματος. Στὴν
περίπτωσιν ὑποθέσεως ποὺ δέν ἔχει πραγματοποιηθῇ στο παρελθόν,
χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸν *Past Perfect* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

α) If *I were* responsible, I would pay the debt. ("Αν ἦμουν
ὕπευθυνος θὰ πλήρωνά τὸ χρέος). Ὑπόθεσις ἀπρογματοποίητη στο
παρόν (γιατὶ δέν εἶμαι ὑπεύθυνος). Χρήσις τοῦ *Past Tense* «*I
were*» τῆς Subjunctive τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be*. Καθὼς βλέ-
πομεν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεως ἔχει τὸν ξεχωριστὸ τύπο
τῆς Subjunctive: «*I were*».

β) If *I had been* responsible, I would have paid the debt.
("Αν ἦμουν—στο παρελθόν—ὕπευθυνος, θὰ εἶχα πληρώσει τὸ χρέος).
Ὑπόθεσις ποὺ δέν πραγματοποιήθηκε στο παρελθόν (γιατὶ δέν ἦ-
μουν ὑπεύθυνος). Χρήσις στὴν Subjunctive τοῦ *Past Perfect*, «*I
had been*», ποὺ εἶναι ὁ τύπος τοῦ ἀνιστοίχου χρόνου τῆς *Indi-
cative Mood* ("Οριστικῆς).

γ) If *I won* the lottery, I would buy a house. ("Αν κέρδιζα
—τόρα—τὸ λαχεῖο, θ' ἀγόραζα ἓνα σπίτι).

δ) If *I had won* the lottery, I would have bought a house.
("Αν εἶχα κερδίσει—στο παρελθόν—τὸ λαχεῖο, θὰ εἶχα ἀγοράσει
ἓνα σπίτι).

ε) If *he were looking* after the business, everything would
be all right. ("Αν αὐτὸς ἐφρόντιζε γιὰ τὴν ὑπόθεσιν, ὅλα θὰ πῆγαι-
ναν καλά).

στ) If *it hadn't been raining*, he would have come. ("Αν
δέν ἔβρεχε, θὰ εἶχε ἔλθει).

Καθὼς βλέπομεν ἀπὸ τὰ ἑξ παραδείγματα, μόνο στο πρῶτο καὶ
πέμπτον εἶνε ἐμφανῆς ἡ χρησιμοποίησις τῆς *Subjunctive*, ὡς ξεχωρι-
στοῦ τύπου (*I were, he were*). Στὰ ὑπόλοιπα παραδείγματα οἱ χρό-
νοι τῶν ρημάτων στὴν *Subjunctive* ἔχουν τὸν τύπον τῶν ἀνιστοί-

χων χρόνων τῆς Indicative Mood. (If *I had been*, If *I won*, If *I had won*, If *it hadn't been raining*).

Παρατηρήσεις:

Πολλές φορές μπορεί νὰ παραλειφθῇ ἀπὸ τὴν ὑποθετικὴ πρότασι ἡ λέξις *if*. Στὶς περιπτώσεις αὐτὲς τὸ ρῆμα τῆς ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεως χρησιμοποιεῖται στὸν ἐρωτηματικὸ τύπο χωρὶς, ἐννοεῖται, ἡ πρότασις νὰ γίνεται ἐρωτηματικὴ. Αὐτὸ συμβαίνει: α) Ὅταν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεως εἶνε ἓνα ἀπὸ τὰ ρήματα *to be* καὶ *to have* καὶ στοὺς χρόνους *Past* καὶ *Past Perfect*, καὶ β) Ὅταν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεως εἶνε οἰοδήποτε ἄλλο ρῆμα καὶ στοὺς χρόνους *Continuous Past* καὶ *Past Perfect* (*Continuous* ἢ *Simple*).

Παραδείγματα:

α) *Were he* not my friend, I would betray him. (Ἄν δὲν ἦ-
ταν φίλος μου θὰ τὸν προδίδω). Ἡ αὐτὴ πρότασις μπορεί νὰ διατυ-
πωθῇ ἐπίσης καὶ μὲ τὴ λέξι *if*, ἥτοι: If *he were* not my friend, I
would betray him.

β) *Had I* the money, I should pay. (Ἄν εἶχα χρήματα θὰ
πλήρωνω). Ἡ αὐτὴ πρότασις διατυπώται καὶ μὲ τὴ λέξι *if*, ἥτοι:
If *I had* the money, I should pay.

γ) *Had I found* the book, I would have given it to you.
(Ἄν εὑρισκα τὸ βιβλίο, θὰ σὰς τὸ εἶχα δώσει). Ἡ αὐτὴ πρότασις
διατυπώται καὶ μὲ τὸ *if*, ἥτοι: If *I had found* the book, I would
have given it to you.

2. Ἡ *Subjunctive* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης σὲ προτάσεις, οἱ ὁ-
ποῖες ἐκφράζουν *εὐχή*, καθὼς ἐπίσης σὲ προτάσεις, αἱ ὁποῖες ἐκφρά-
ζουν *συγκατάβασι*. Ὅταν ἡ εὐχή εἶνε πραγματοποιήσιμη, τὸ ρῆμα
χρησιμοποιεῖται στὸν *Present Tense*. Ὅταν ἡ εὐχή εἶναι ἀπραγμα-
τοποιήτη (στὸ παρόν), τὸ ρῆμα χρησιμοποιεῖται στὸν *Past Tense*.
Ὅταν τέλος ἡ εὐχή δὲν ἔχει πραγματοποιηθῇ στὸ παρελθόν, τὸ ρῆ-
μα χρησιμοποιεῖται στὸν *Past Perfect*.

Παραδείγματα:

α) God *have* mercy on us. (Ὁ Θεὸς νὰ μᾶς ἐλεήσῃ). Εὐχή πραγματοποιήσιμη. Χρήσις τοῦ Present Tense. (*have*).

β) God *save* the king. (Ὁ θεὸς νὰ σώσῃ τὸν βασιλέα). Εὐχή πραγματοποιήσιμη. Χρήσις τοῦ Present Tense (*save*).

γ) I wish *he were* here. (Μακάρι νὰ ἦταν ἐδῶ). Εὐχή ἀπραγματοποίητη στὸ παρόν. (Γιατὶ δὲν εἶναι τώρα ἐδῶ). Χρήσις τοῦ Paste Tense (*he were*).

δ) I wish *I knew*. (Μακάρι νὰ ἤξερα). Εὐχή ἀπραγματοποίητη στὸ παρόν. (Γιατὶ δὲν ξέρω τώρα). Χρήσις τοῦ Past Tense (*I knew*).

ε) My son wishes *he were* a mechanical engineer. (Ὁ γυιὸς μου ἐπιθυμεῖ νὰ ἦταν μηχανικός). Εὐχή ἀπραγματοποίητη στὸ παρόν. (Γιατὶ δὲν εἶνε τώρα μηχανικός). Χρήσις τοῦ Past Tense (*he were*).

στ) I wish *I hadn't spent* so much money yestetday. (Μακάρι νὰ μὴ ξόδευα χθὲς τόσα πολλὰ χρήματα). Εὐχή ποὺ δὲν πραγματοποιήθηκε στὸ παρελθόν. (Γιατὶ ἔχω ξοδεύσει πολλὰ χρήματα χθὲς). Χρήσις τοῦ Past Perfect (*I hadn't spent*).

ζ) I wish *I had bought* this house. (Μακάρι νὰ εἶχα ἀγοράσει αὐτὸ τὸ σπίτι). Εὐχή ποὺ δὲν ἔχει πραγματοποιηθῇ στὸ παρελθόν. (Γιατὶ δὲν τὸ ἔχω ἀγοράσει). Χρήσις τοῦ Past Perfect. (*I had bought*).

η) I wish *I had learned* English, when I was at school. (Μακάρι νὰ εἶχα μάθει Ἀγγλικά, ὅταν ἦμουν στὸ Σχολεῖο). Εὐχή ποὺ δὲν ἔχει πραγματοποιηθῇ στὸ παρελθόν. (Γιατὶ δὲν εἶχα μάθει τότε Ἀγγλικά). Χρήσις τοῦ Past Perfect. (*I had learned*).

θ) *Be* that as it may. (Ἐξ ὅσον παραδεχθοῦμε πὼς εἶναι). Ἐκφρασις συγκαταθέσεως. Χρήσις τῆς Subjunctive *be* τοῦ ῥήματος to be.

3. Ἡ *Subjunctive* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ρήματα *to suggest, to demand, to propose*. Ἐπίσης ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴν λέξιν *lest, lest perhaps*, καθὼς καὶ ὕστερα ἀπὸ φράσεις σὰν τὴν ἐπόμενους.

it is essential that...

it is necessary that...

it is natural that..., κλπ.

Σὲ ὅλες ὁμῶς αὐτὰς τὴν περιπτώσεις, ἀντὶ τῆς *Subjunctive*, εἶναι δυνατόν νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῇ ὁ *Future in the Past* τῆς *Indicative*, μὲ τὸ *should* σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα τοῦ ἐνικοῦ καὶ τοῦ πληθυντικοῦ. Στὴ σύγχρονη μάλιστα Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα γίνεται χρῆσις, κατὰ προτίμησιν τοῦ *Future in the Past* τῆς *Indicative* μὲ τὸ *should*, ἀντὶ τῆς *Subjunctive*.

Παραδείγματα:

α) I suggest *you be* more careful. (Σᾶς συνιστῶ νὰ εἶσθε πιὸ προσεκτικός). Χρῆσις τῆς *Subjunctive* (*you be*) ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα *suggest*, ἢ: I suggest *you should be* more careful. Χρῆσις τοῦ *Future in the Past* (*you should be*) μὲ τὸ *should* στὸ β' πρόσωπο.

β) We demand that *he surrender* at once. (Ἀπαιτοῦμεν, ὅπως παραδοθῇ ἀμέσως). Χρῆσις τῆς *Subjunctive* (*he surrender*) ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα *demand* ἢ:

We demand that *he should surrender* at once. Χρῆσις τοῦ *Future in the Past* (*he should surrender*) μὲ τὸ *should* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο.

γ) I propose that *he appoint* a new clerk. (Προτείνω, ὅπως διορίσῃ νέον ὑπάλληλον). Χρῆσις τῆς *Subjunctive* (*he appoint*) ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα *propose*, ἢ: I propose that *he should appoint* a new clerk. Χρῆσις τοῦ *Future in the Past* (*he should appoint*) μὲ τὸ *should* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο.

δ) Tell him to write it down, lest *he forget*. (Πές του νὰ τὸ σημειώσῃ μήπως ξεχάσῃ). Χρῆσις τῆς *Subjunctive* (*he forget*) ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ *lest* ἢ:

Tell him to write it down, lest *he should forget*. Χρῆσις τοῦ Future in the Past (*he should forget*) μετὰ τὸ *should* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο.

ε) You ought to go, lest perhaps *he become* angry. (Ὁφείλετε νὰ φύγετε, μήπως τυχὸν θυμώσει). Χρῆσις τῆς Subjunctive (*he become*) ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ *lest perhaps* ἢ:

You ought to go, lest perhaps *he should become* angry. Χρῆσις τοῦ Future in the Past (*he should become*) μετὰ τὸ *should* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο.

στ) It is essential that *he take* more care. (Εἶναι ἀπαραίτητον νὰ προσέχη περισσότερον). Χρῆσις τῆς Subjunctive (*he take*) ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ *it is essential that* ἢ: It is essential that *he should take* more care. Χρῆσις τοῦ Future in the Past (*he should take*) μετὰ τὸ *should* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο.

ζ) It is necessary that *he execute* these orders. (Εἶναι ἀναγκαῖον ὅπως ἐκτελέσῃ αὐτὰς τὰς διαταγὰς). Χρῆσις τῆς Subjunctive (*he execute*) ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ *it is necessary that*, ἢ:

It is necessary that *he should execute* these orders. Χρῆσις τοῦ Future in the Past (*he should execute*) μετὰ τὸ *should* στὸ γ' πρόσωπο.

4. Ἡ *Subjunctive* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης μετὰ ἑμερικῶν ἰδιωματικῶν φράσεις σὰν τὰς ἐπόμενες.

α) Whatever *be*fall we have done our duty. (Ὅ,τιδήποτε καὶ νὰ συμβῇ, ἔχομεν κάνει τὸ καθήκον μας).

β) Whatever *be* my fate, I am unafraid. (Ὅποιαδήποτε καὶ ἂν εἶνε ἡ μοῖρα μου, δὲν φοβᾶμαι).

γ) Though *he beg* me, on his knees, I will not assist him. (Καὶ νὰ με παρακαλέσῃ γονατιστός, δὲν θὰ τὸν βοηθήσω).

Παρατηρήσεις:

Σὲ ὑποθετικὰς προτάσεις μετὰ τὰς λέξεις *if* ἢ *unless*, μετὰ τὰς ὁποίας ἐκφράζομεν ὑπόθεσι πραγματοποίησιμῃ, χρησιμοποιοῦμεν τὸν Pre-

sent Tense τῆς *Indicative* καὶ ὅχι τῆς *Subjunctive*. Αἱ πρῶτες ὑποθετικῆς προτάσεις μετὰ τὴν λέξιν *if* μποροῦν ν' ἀποδοθοῦν καὶ μετὰ *Future in the Past* τῆς *Indicative* μετὰ τὸ *should* σὲ ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα. Εἰς περιπτώσιν κατὰ τὴν ὁποίαν παραλείπεται ἀπὸ τὴν ὑποθετικὴν πρότασιν ἡ λέξις *if*, τότε ὁ *Future in the Past* τοῦ ρήματος χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ ἔρωτηματικὸν τύπον.

Παραδείγματα :

α) *If he comes*, I'll give him the money. (Ἄν ἔλθῃ, θὰ τοῦ δώσω τὰ χρήματα). ἢ : *If he should come*, I'll give him the money. ἢ : *Should he come*, I'll give him the money.

β) *If you need* any further information, don't hesitate to ask (Ἄν χρειάζεσθε περισσότερες πληροφορίες μὴ διστάζετε νὰ ζητήσητε). ἢ : *Should you need* any further information, don't hesitate to ask.

γ) We shall not go to the seaside, *unless* the weather is good. (Δὲν θὰ πᾶμε στὴν ἀκροθαλασσιὰ ἐκτὸς ἂν ὁ καιρὸς εἶναι καλὸς).

δ) He will not come, *unless* you invite him. (Δὲν θὰ ἔλθῃ, ἐκτὸς ἂν τὸν καλέσετε).

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ VIII

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΗΣ SUBJUNCTIVE

A. Put in the correct Tense in the following sentences.

1. If your son (to study) hard he would certainly succeed. 2. If your son (to study) hard, he would have certainly succeeded. 3. If I (to have) money I would buy a house. 4. If I (to have) money I would have bought a house. 5. If his daughter (to study) her lessons well, she would surely pass. 6. If his daughter (to study) her lessons well, she would have surely passed. 7. If my friend (to call) me on the telephone, I would speak to him. 8. If my friend (to call) me on the telephone, I would have spoken to him. 9. If I (to see) your brother, I would give him your message. 10. If I (to see) your brother, I would have given him the message.

B. Translate into English.

1. "Αν ἡ τιμὴ αὐτοῦ τοῦ σπιτιοῦ ἦταν πρὸ χαμηλὴ θὰ τὸ ἀγόραζα (τώρα) 2. "Αν ἡ τιμὴ αὐτοῦ τοῦ σπιτιοῦ ἦταν πέραν πρὸ χαμηλὴ θὰ τὸ ἀγόραζα. 3. Δὲν πιστεύω νὰ τὸ ἔκανε (τώρα), ἂν συναισθάνετο τίς συνέπειες. 4. Δὲν πιστεύω νὰ τὸ ἔκανε τὴν περασμένη ἑβδομάδα, ἂν συναισθάνετο τίς συνέπειες. 5. "Αν εὑρισκα (τώρα) τὸ βιβλίον, θὰ σὰς τὸ ἔδιδα. 6. "Αν εὑρισκα χθὲς τὸ βιβλίον θὰ σὰς τὸ ἔδιδα. 7. "Αν ἔσβυνα (τώρα) τὰ φῶτα, θὰ μέναμε στὸ σκοτάδι. 8. "Αν ἔσβυνα χθὲς τὰ φῶτα, θὰ μέναμε στὸ σκοτάδι. 9. "Αν εἶχα (τώρα) αὐτοκίνητο θὰ πῆγαινα στὴ Θεσσαλονίκη. 10. "Αν εἶχα χθὲς αὐτοκίνητο θὰ πῆγαινα στὴ Θεσσαλονίκη.

III. IMPERATIVE — ΠΡΟΣΤΑΚΤΙΚΗ

1. Στην Ἀγγλική γλώσσα ἡ *Imperative* ἔχει κυρίως ἓνα μόνο τύπο γιὰ τὸ δεύτερο πρόσωπο τοῦ ἐνικοῦ καὶ τοῦ πληθυντικοῦ, πὺν εἶναι ὁ τύπος τοῦ *Infinitive* (ἀπαρεμφάτου) τοῦ *Present Tense*, χωρὶς τὸ *to*.

Παραδείγματα:

<i>Infinitive</i>		<i>Imperative</i>
	Ἐνικὸς	Πληθυντικὸς
to go	go (πήγαινε)	go (πηγαίνετε)
to play	play (παίξε)	play (παίξτε)
to speak	speak (μίλα)	speak (μιλήστε)

2. Ἡ *imperative* χρησιμοποιεῖται προκειμένου νὰ δώσωμεν διαταγὰς ἢ νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν παρακλήσιν.

Παραδείγματα:

Go and play in the garden. (Πηγαίνετε νὰ παίξετε στὸν κήπο). (ἔννοια προσταγῆς).

Wait outside for a few minutes, please. (Περιμένετε ἔξω γιὰ λίγα λεπτά, παρακαλῶ). (ἔννοια παρακλήσεως).

3. Ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὸ δεύτερο πρόσωπο τοῦ ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ, τὰ λοιπὰ πρόσωπα τῆς *Imperative* ἀποδίδονται στὴν Ἀγγλική περιφραστικά μετὰ τὴν *Imperative* (Προστακτική) τοῦ ῥήματος *to let* (ἐπιτρέπω), τὴν προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία τοῦ προσώπου πὺν ἀφορᾷ ἡ ἐνέργεια, σὲ πτωσί αἰτιατική, καὶ τὸ *Infinitive* τοῦ ῥήματος πὺν ἐκφράζει τὴν ἐνέργεια.

Παράδειγμα:

Infinitive

Imperative

Ἑνικός

Πληθυντικός

to go	let me	go (ἄς πάω)	let us	go (ἄς πᾶμε)
		go (πήγενε)		go (πάτε)
	let him	go (ἄς πάη)	let them	go (ἄς πᾶνε)
	let her	go (ἄς πάη)		

Ἡ ἔννοια τοῦ περιφραστικοῦ τύπου *let him go, let us go*, κλπ. εἶται διπλῇ, ἑξαρτωμένη ἀπὸ τὴν προσωπικότητα τοῦ ὁμιλοῦντος, καθὼς καὶ ἀπὸ τό πρόσωπο ἢ πρόσωπα πρὸς τὰ ὁποῖα ἀπευθύνεται ὁ ὁμιλῶν. Καὶ ἄλλοτε μὲν ἔχει τὴν ἔννοια τῆς προσταγῆς, ἄλλοτε δέ τῆς παρακλήσεως.

Ἡ φράσις π.χ. *Let him speak*, σημαίνει «ἄς μιλήσῃ», μπορεῖ νὰ σημαίνει ὁμως καὶ «ἐπιτρέψτε τον νὰ μιλήσῃ» μὲ τὴν ἔννοια παρακλήσεως. Ἐπίσης ἡ φράσις *Let them see him*, σημαίνει «Ἄς τὸν ἴδουιν», σημαίνει ἐπίσης «ἐπιτρέψτε τους νὰ τὸν ἴδουιν» μὲ ἔννοιαν παρακλήσεως.

IV. INFINITIVE — ΑΠΑΡΕΜΦΑΤΟ

Τὸ *Infinitive* εἶνε Ἑγκλισις τοῦ ρήματος. Τὸ *Present Infinitive* χωρὶς τὸ *to* εἶνε ἓνας ἀπὸ τοὺς τρεῖς βασικοὺς τύπους τοῦ ρήματος, οἱ ὅποιοι, ὡς γνωστόν, εἶνε α) τὸ *Infinitive*, β) ὁ *Simple Past Tense*, καὶ γ) ἡ *Past Participle*.

Τὸ *Infinitive* ἀπαντᾷ στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ στοὺς χρόνους: *Present Simple* καὶ *Continuous*, καὶ β) *Perfect* (*Simple* καὶ *Continuous*).

Παραδείγματα:

Infinitive τοῦ ρήματος *to take*.

Present infinitive

to take (positive)

to be taking (positive)

not to take (negative)

not to be taking (negative)

Perfect infinitive

to have taken (pos.)

to have been taking (pos.)

not to have taken (neg.)

not to have been taking (neg.)

ΧΡΗΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ INFINITIVE

A. Τὸ *Infinitive* χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ δευτερεύουσες προτάσεις μὲ τίς ὁποῖες ἐκφράζομεν ἓνα σκοπό.

Ἡ χρῆσις ὅμως τοῦ *Infinitive* στὴν περίπτωσιν αὕτῃ ποικίλλει καθόσον πρόκειται περὶ ταῦτοπροσωπίας ἢ ἑτεροπροσωπίας.

1. Ὅταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως εἶνε τὸ

αὐτὸ μὲ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως (ταῦτο-προσωπία), τότε διὰ νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν τὸν σκοπὸν χρησιμοποιοῦμεν στὴ δευτερεύουσα πρότασιν ἢ ἁπλοῦν *Infinitive* ἢ μίαν ἀπὸ τῆς φράσεις: «*in order*», «*so as*» καὶ *Infinitive*.

Παραδείγματα:

α) I went to London *to learn* English, ἢ: I went to London *in order to learn* (ἢ: *so as to learn*) English. (Πῆγα στὸ Λονδὶνο γιὰ νὰ μάθω Ἀγγλικά).

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτό, ὅπου τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως, *I* (ἐγὼ), εἶνε τὸ αὐτὸ μὲ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς δευτερεύουσας προτάσεως, *I* (ἐγὼ) (ταῦτοπροσωπία), γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν τὸν σκοπὸν χρησιμοποιοῦμεν ἢ ἁπλοῦν *Infinitive* (*to learn*), ἢ τὴ φράσιν «*in order*»+*Infinitive* (*in order to learn*), ἢ τὴ φράσιν «*so as*»+*Infinitive* (*so as to learn*).

β) He came *to ask* your help, ἢ: He came *in order to ask* (ἢ: *so as to ask*) your help. (Ἦλθε γιὰ νὰ ζητήσῃ τὴ βοήθειάν σου).

Καὶ στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτό, ὅπου πρόκειται περὶ ταῦτοπροσωπίας (ὑποκείμενο τῆς κυρίας καὶ δευτερεύουσας προτάσεως τὸ αὐτό, *He*) ὁ σκοπὸς ἐκφράζεται ἢ μὲ ἁπλοῦν *Infinitive* (*to ask*), ἢ μὲ τὴ φράσιν «*in order*»+*Infinitive* (*in order to ask*) ἢ τὴ φράσιν «*so as*»+*Infinitive*.

γ) They studied hard *to pass* the examinations. ἢ: They studied hard *in order to pass* (ἢ *so as to pass*) the examinations. (Μελέτησαν σκληρὰ γιὰ νὰ περάσουν στὶς ἐξετάσεις).

Καὶ στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτό, ὅπου πρόκειται περὶ ταῦτοπροσωπίας (ὑποκείμενο τῆς κυρίας καὶ τῆς δευτερεύουσας προτάσεως τὸ αὐτό, *they*), ὁ σκοπὸς ἐκφράζεται ἢ μὲ ἁπλοῦν *Infinitive* (*to pass*) ἢ μὲ τὴ φράσιν «*in order*»+*Infinitive* (*in order to pass*), ἢ τὴ φράσιν «*so as*»+*Infinitive*.

2. Ὄταν τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς δευτερεύουσας προτάσεως (ἑτεροπροσωπία), τότε διὰ νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν τὸν σκοπὸν χρησιμοποιοῦμε μίαν ἀπὸ

τις φράσεις «*so that*» ή «*in order that*» ακολουθουμένην ἀπὸ ἑνα ἀπὸ τὰ βοηθητικὰ ρήματα *can, may, shall* καὶ τὸ Infinitive τοῦ ρήματος, χωρὶς τὸ *to*.

Παραδείγματα:

α) I am writing this letter to him *in order that he may send* (ή: *so that he may send*) me some money.

(Τοῦ γράφω αὐτὸ ἐδῶ τὸ γράμμα γιὰ νὰ μοῦ στείλῃ μερικὰ χρήματα).

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο, *I*, τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο, *he*, τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως (ἐτεροπροσωπία). Χρησιμοποιοῦμεν ἐπομένως γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν τὸν σκοπὸ τὴν φράσι «*in order that*» ή τὴ φράσι «*so that*» ακολουθουμένην ἀπὸ τὸ βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα «*he may*» καὶ τὸ Infinitive τοῦ ρήματος χωρὶς τὸ «*to*» (*send*).

β) He gave me some money *in order that I could go* (ή: *so that I could go*) to the theatre. (Μοῦ ἔδωσε μερικὰ χρήματα γιὰ νὰ πάω στὸ θέατρο).

Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτό, ὅπου πρόκειται περὶ ἐτεροπροσωπίας (τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως, *he*, διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως, *I*, γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν τὸν σκοπὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴ φράσι «*in order that*» ή *so that*) ακολουθουμένην ἀπὸ τὸ βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα *I could* καὶ τὸ Infinitive τοῦ ρήματος χωρὶς τὸ *to* (*go*).

γ) I shall go to his house *in order that he may help me* (ή *so that he may help me*). (Θὰ πάω σπíti του γιὰ νὰ μὲ βοηθήσῃ).

Στὸ παράδειγμα, ὅπου ἐπίσης πρόκειται περὶ ἐτεροπροσωπίας (ὑποκείμενο κυρίας προτάσεως, *I*—ὑποκείμενο δευτερευούσης προτάσεως, *he*) γιὰ νὰ ἐκφράσωμεν τὸν σκοπὸ χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὴ φράσι «*in order that*» (ή: *so that*) ακολουθουμένην ἀπὸ τὸ βοηθητικὸ ρῆμα *he may* καὶ τὸ Infinitive τοῦ ρήματος χωρὶς τὸ *to* (*help*).

δ) They had taken us in their car, *in order that we would*

not get wet (ἢ: *so that we would not get wet.*) (Μᾶς εἶχαν πάρεϊ στὸ αὐτοκίνητό τους γιὰ νὰ μὴ βραχοῦμε).

Τὸ ὑποκείμενο, *they*, τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο, *we*, τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως (έτεροπροσωπία). Χρησὶς ἐπομένως τῆς φράσεως «*in order that*», ἢ: «*so that*», ἀκολουθουμένης ἀπὸ τὸ βοηθητικὸ ῥήμα «*would*» καὶ τὸ Infinitive τοῦ ῥήματος χωρὶς τὸ *to* (*get*).

Β. Τὸ *Infinitive* Χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης γιὰ τὴν ἀπόδοσι τοῦ ῥήματος δευτερευούσης προτάσεως, ὅταν ἡ τελευταία αὕτη εἶναι ἀντικείμενον τοῦ ῥήματος τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως. Κι' ἐδῶ ὅμως θὰ ἐξετάσωμεν δυὸ περιπτώσεις, ἥτοι: 1) τὴν περίπτωσιν τῆς ταῦτοπροσωπίας καὶ 2) τὴν περίπτωσιν τῆς έτεροπροσωπίας.

1. Περίπτωσις ταῦτοπροσωπίας

Στὴν περίπτωσι ταῦτοπροσωπίας (ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ῥήματος τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως τὸ αὐτὸ μὲ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ῥήματος τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως) τὸ ῥήμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως ἀποδίδεται ἄλλοτε ἀποκλειστικῶς καὶ μόνον μὲ Γερούνδιο (*Gerund*) καὶ ἄλλοτε ἀδιαφόρως μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο ἢ μὲ Γερούνδιο.

Στὸ κεφάλαιο περὶ Γερονδίου δίδομεν τὰ κυριώτερα ῥήματα τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης, ὅστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ὁποῖα τὸ ῥήμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως ἀποδίδεται ἀποκλειστικῶς καὶ μόνον μὲ Γερούνδιο καὶ οὐδέποτε μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο (*abhor, appreciate, avoid*, κ.λ.π.) Στὸ ἴδιο κεφάλαιο δίδομεν ἐπίσης μερικὰ ἀπὸ τὰ ῥήματα τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης, ὅστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ὁποῖα τὸ ῥήμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως μπορεῖ ν' ἀποδοθῇ, εἴτε μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο, εἴτε μὲ Γερούνδιο, (*begin, cease, continue*. κλπ).

Ἐκτὸς ὅμως ἀπὸ τῆς δυὸ αὐτῆς κατηγορίας τῶν ῥημάτων ὑπάρχουν ἄλλα ῥήματα τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης, ὅστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ὁποῖα τὸ ῥήμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως ἀποδίδεται μόνο μὲ Ἀπαρέμφατο. Τέτοια εἶναι τὰ ῥήματα: *dare, decide, try, wish*, καὶ ἄλλα.

Παραδείγματα:

α) I have *never dared* (to) *ask* him about the matter. (Δὲν τόλμησα ποτὲ νὰ τὸν ρωτήσω γιὰ τὴν ὑπόθεσι).

β) Dare you *jump* from the top of that high wall? (Τολμᾶτε νὰ πηδήσετε ἀπὸ τὴν κορυφὴ ἐκείνου τοῦ ψηλοῦ τοίχου;)

γ) He has decided *to become* a business man. (Ἀποφάσισε νὰ γίνῃ ἐμπορευόμενος).

δ) The general decided *to order* an attack. (Ὁ Στρατηγὸς ἀπεφάσισε νὰ διατάξῃ ἐπίθεσι).

ε) Try *to behave* better. (Προσπάθησε νὰ συμπεριφερθῇς καλύτερα).

στ) He tried *to persuade* me. (Προσπάθησε νὰ μὲ πείσῃ).

ζ) I want *to see* a doctor at once. (Θέλω νὰ ἰδῶ ἄμέσως ἓνα γιατρό.)

η) He wanted *to come* and *see* me. (Ἦθελε νὰ ἔλθῃ νὰ μὲ ἰδῇ).

θ) I wish *to leave* now (Θέλω νὰ φύγω τώρα).

ι) They wished *to take* part in the discussion. (Ἦθελαν νὰ πάρουν μέρος στὴ συζήτησι).

2. Περίπτωσις ἑτεροπροσωπίας

Στὴν περίπτωσι ἑτεροπροσωπίας ἡ ἀπόδοσις τοῦ ρήματος τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως ἐξαρτᾶται ἐκ τοῦ κατὰ πόσον τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως δέχεται ἢ ὄχι προσωπικὸν ἀντικείμενον.

Ὅταν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως δέχεται προσωπικὸν ἀντικείμενον, ὅπως π. χ. τὰ ρήματα *beg, want, ask, wish, tell*, κλπ. τότε τὸ ρῆμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως ἀποδίδεται μὲ Ἄπαρμόφατο, πρὸ τοῦ ὁποίου τίθεται οὐσιαστικὸ ἢ προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία σὲ πτῶσι αἰτιατικῇ.

Παραδείγματα:

α) We begged *them to lend* us some money. (Τοὺς παρακαλέσαμε νὰ μᾶς δανείσουν λίγα χρήματα).

β) I want *my son to come* at once. (Θέλω ὁ γυὸς μου νὰ ἔλθῃ ἀμέσως).

γ) He asked *me to help* him. (Μοῦ ζήτησε νὰ τὸν βοηθήσω.)

δ) Do you wish *me to leave* now? (Θέλετε νὰ φύγω τώρα;)

ε) He wants *me to go*. (Θέλει νὰ πάω).

στ) I told the students *to come* on time. (Εἶπα στοὺς σπουδαστὰς νὰ ἔλθουν στὴν ὥρα).

*Όταν τὸ ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως δὲν δέχεται προσωπικὸν ἀντικείμενον, ὅπως π.χ. τὰ ρήματα *to hope, to believe, to think*, κ.λ.π. τότε ἡ δευτερεύουσα πρότασις ἀποδίδεται μὲ τὸ *that* καὶ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως σὲ ἀνάλογο χρόνον. Μὲ τὰ ρήματα *to believe* καὶ *to think*, ὅταν χρησιμοποιοῦνται μὲ τὴν ἔννοια τοῦ *consider*=θεωρῶ, ὅποτε δέχονται προσωπικὸν ἀντικείμενον, τὸ ρῆμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως ἀποδίδεται μὲ **Ἀπαρέμφατο**.

Παραδείγματα:

α) We hoped *that he had done* his duty. (*Ἠλπίσαμε πὼς εἶχε κάνει τὸ καθήκον του).

β) I hope *that he works* well. (*Ἐλπίζω πὼς δουλεύει καλά).

γ) We believe *that they will come*. (Πιστεύομεν πὼς θὰ ἔλθουν).

δ) I believed *that he had told* the truth. (Πίστευσα πὼς εἶπε εἰπῇ τὴν ἀλήθειαν).

ε) I think *that he is telling* the truth. (Νομίζω πὼς λέει τὴν ἀλήθειαν).

*Ενῶ: I believe *him to be* an honest man. (Τὸν θεωρῶ ἔντιμον ἄνδρα).

ΣΗΜ: 1) Μὲ τὸ ρῆμα *to believe*, ὡς ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως, ἡ δευτερεύουσα πρότασις ἀποδίδεται καὶ ἐπὶ ταυτοπροσωπίας ἐπίσης μὲ τὸ *that* καὶ ἀνάλογο χρόνο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως.

Παραδείγματα:

α) I believe *that I am* right. (καὶ ὅχι: *to be* right). (Πιστεύω πὼς ἔχω δίκαιο).

β) He believes *that he tells* the truth. (καὶ ὅχι: *to tell* the truth). (Πιστεύω πὼς λέει τὴν ἀλήθεια).

2) Ὄταν ρῆμα τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως εἶναι τὸ ρῆμα *to suggest* τότε ἐπὶ ἑτεροπροσωπίας τὸ ρῆμα τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως ἀποδίδεται, καθὼς εἶδαμε στὸ σχετικὸ κεφάλαιο, σὲ ἔγκλισι Ὑποτακτικῇ (Subjunctive).

Παραδείγματα:

α) I suggest that he go. (Προτείνω νὰ πάη αὐτός). (καὶ ὅχι: I suggest him to go).

β) He suggested that we leave early. (Πρότεινε νὰ φύγωμεν ἔνωρίς). (καὶ ὅχι: He suggested us to leave early).

ΣΗΜ. α) Ὑστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα *need* χρησιμοποιεῖται *Infinitive* χωρὶς τὸ *to*, ἐφ' ὅσον τὸ ρῆμα *need* χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴ σημασίαν τοῦ «εἶμαι ὑποχρεωμένος νά». Μὲ τὴν σημασίαν αὕτῃ τὸ ρῆμα *need* εἶνε ἑλλειπτικὸ καὶ δὲν παίρνει *s* στὸ τρίτο ἐνικὸ πρόσωπο. Ἐπίσης δὲν χρησιμοποιεῖται σὲ καταφατικὲς προτάσεις, ὁπότε ἀντ' αὐτοῦ, χρησιμοποιοῦμε ἓνα ἀπὸ τὰ ρήματα *have to*, ἢ *must*. Τέλος ὁ ἄρνητικὸς καὶ ἐρωτηματικὸς τύπος αὐτοῦ δὲν σχηματίζεται μὲ τὸ βοηθητικὸ *to do*, ἀλλ' ἔχει ἐρωτηματικὸν τύπον *need I?* καὶ ἄρνητικὸν *I need not*.

Παραδείγματα:

Tell him that he *need not come* tomorrow. (Εἰπέτε του πὼς

δέν είναι υποχρεωμένος να έλθη αύριο).—*Need you go so soon?* (Είσθε υποχρεωμένος να πάτε τόσο ένωρίς;).

Τò ρήμα *need* με τήν σημασία «είνε ανάγκη να» ή «έχω ανάγκη από» χρησιμοποιείται ως κανονικό δμαλò ρήμα.

Παραδείγματα:

It needs to be told carefully. (Αυτό είναι ανάγκη να λεχθῇ προσεκτικά).—*Do you need* any help? (Έχετε ανάγκη από βοήθειαν τινα;). Καθώς βλέπομεν στά παραδείγματα τῆς παραγράφου (α) τò *need* χρησιμοποιείται με τò τρίτο ενικό χωρίς τελικόν *s*. («*that he need*» καί ὄχι *that he needs*) καί με τὸν ἐρωτηματικὸ τύπο «*need you?*» (καί ὄχι: *do you need?*), ἐνῶ στά παραδείγματα τῆς παραγράφου (β) τò *need* χρησιμοποιείται ως κανονικό δμαλò ρήμα.

Γ. 1. Ὑστερα ἀπὸ μερικὲς ἀπρόσωπες φράσεις «*it is easy*», «*it is difficult*», «*it is an honour*», «*it is a privilege*», κλπ. ἀκολουθεῖ, *Infinitive* (ἀπαρέμφατο), ἐφόσον ἡ ἐκφραζομένη ἔννοια εἶναι γενική. Αὐτò ἰσχύει με οἰονδήποτε χρόνον τοῦ ρήματος *to be* τῶν ἀπρόσωπων φράσεων. (*it was easy, it has been easy, it was difficult*, κλπ.)

Παραδείγματα:

α) *It is easy to learn* English (Εἶναι εὐκόλο νὰ μάθῃ κανεὶς Ἀγγλικά).

β) *It was difficult to understand* what George said. (Ἦταν δύσκολο νὰ καταλάβῃ κανεὶς τὶ εἶπεν ὁ Γεῶργος).

γ) *It will be an honour to represent* you. (Θὰ εἶναι τιμὴ νὰ σᾶς ἀντιπροσωπεύσῃ κανεὶς).

2 Ὅταν ἡ ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως ἡ ὁποία ἀρχίζει με μίαν ἀπρόσωπον φράσιν, ὡς αἱ ἀνωτέρω, δέν εἶναι γενική, ἀλλ' ἐκφράζει τὴν ἐνέργειαν ἑνὸς ἢ περισσοτέρων προσώπων, τότε πρὸ τοῦ *Infinitive*,

τὸ ὁποῖον ἀκολουθεῖ τὴν ἀπρόσωπον φράσι, τίθεται τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ *Infinitive* σὲ πτώσι δοτική μὲ τὴν πρόθεσι «*for*».

Παραδείγματα

α) It is easy *for you to learn* English. (Εἶνε εὐκολο νὰ μάθετε ἀγγλικά).

β) It was difficult *for us to understand* what George said. (Ἦταν δύσκολο νὰ καταλάβωμεν τι εἶπεν ὁ Γεώργιος).

γ) It will be an honour *for me to represent* you. (Θὰ εἶνε τιμὴ μου νὰ σᾶς ἀντιπροσωπεύσω).

Καθὼς βλέπομεν ἐνῶ στὴν πρώτη σειρὰ τῶν παραδειγμάτων, ὅπου ἡ ἔννοια εἶνε γενική, εὐθὺς ἀμέσως μετὰ τὴν ἀπρόσωπη φράσι ἀκολουθεῖ *Infinitive*, (to learn, to understand, to represent), στὴ δεύτερη σειρὰ, ὅπου ἡ ἔννοια δὲν εἶνε γενική, πρὸ τοῦ *Infinitive* χρησιμοποιεῖται τὸ ὑποκείμενό του σὲ πτώσι δοτική μὲ τὴν πρόθεσι *for*. (*for you to learn, for us to understand, for me to represent*).

Δ. Ὑστερα ἀπὸ τὰ βοηθητικὰ ρήματα *can, must, may*, καθὼς καὶ ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ρήματα *to let* (ἐπιτρέπω) καὶ *to make* (ὅταν χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴ σημασία τοῦ «ἀναγκάζω») χρησιμοποιεῖται *Infinitive* χωρὶς τὸ *to*.

Παραδείγματα:

α) You can't travel (καὶ ὄχι: *to travel*) first class with a third-class ticket (Δὲν μπορείτε νὰ ταξιδεύετε πρώτη θέσι μὲ εἰσιτήριο τρίτης θέσεως).

β) Can I *open* (καὶ ὄχι: *to open*) an account with you? (Μπορῶ νὰ ἀνοίξω λογαριασμὸ μαζί σας;)

γ) You must *work* (καὶ ὄχι: *to work*) hard to acquire good knowledge of a foreign language. (Πρέπει νὰ δουλέψετε σκληρὰ γιὰ ν' ἀποκτήσετε καλὲς γνώσεις μιᾶς ξένης γλώσσης).

δ) We must *see* (καὶ ὄχι: *to see*) what can be done about it.

(Πρέπει νὰ ἰδοῦμε τί μπορεῖ νὰ γίνη γι' αὐτό).

ε) May I *ask* (καὶ ὄχι: *to ask*) a favour of you? (Μπορῶ νὰ σᾶς ζητήσω μιὰ χάρι:).

στ) By the power of fancy we may *create* (καὶ ὄχι: *to create*) an unreal world. (Μὲ τὴ δύναμι τῆς φαντασίας μποροῦμε νὰ δημιουργήσωμεν ἓνα ψεύτικο κόσμο).

ζ) If anything happens to him, let me *know*. (καὶ ὄχι: *to know*). ("Αν τοῦ συμβῇ κάτι εἰδοποιῆστε με).

η) They let the prisoners *escape*. (καὶ ὄχι: *to escape*). ("Αφισαν τοὺς αἰχμαλώτους νὰ δραπετεύσουν).

θ) They made us *wait*. (καὶ ὄχι: *to wait*). (Μᾶς ἀνάγκασαν νὰ περιμένωμεν).

ι) The teacher made us *write* (καὶ ὄχι: *to write*) the exercise again. ("Ο καθηγητὴς μᾶς ἀνάγκασε νὰ ξαναγράψωμεν τὴν ἄσκησι). "Ενῶ: He made *to reply* and then stopped. ("Ἐκανε ν' ἀπαντήσῃ καὶ κατόπιν σταμάτησε).

V. PARTICIPLE — METOXH

1. Ἡ Μετοχή (*Participle*) στήν Ἀγγλική γλῶσσα ἅπαντᾷ σέ τρεῖς χρόνους τοῦ ρήματος: α) στὸν *Present Tense*, β) στὸν *Past Tense*, καὶ γ) στὸν *Perfect Tense*. Ἐχομεν τοῦτέστι: *Present Participle*, *Past Participle* καὶ *Perfect Participle*.

2. Ἡ *Present Participle* σχηματίζεται ἀπὸ τὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο (*Infinitive*) τοῦ ρήματος (χωρὶς τὸ *to*) μὲ τὴν προσθήκην τῆς καταλήξεως *ing*, ὅπως π.χ: α) *to be—being*, β) *to do—doing*, γ) *to eat—eating*, δ) *to play—playing*, κλπ.

Ρήματα τὰ ὁποῖα τελειώνουν στὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο σὲ σύμφωνον πρὸ τοῦ ὁποίου ὑπάρχει φωνήεν, παίρνοντας τὴν κατάληξιν *ing*, διπλασιάζουν τὸ τελικὸν σύμφωνον τοῦ Ἀπαρεμφάτου, ὅπως π.χ: α) *to sit—sitting*, β) *to blot—blotting*, κλπ.

Ρήματα τὰ ὁποῖα τελειώνουν στὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο σὲ *e*, πρὸ τοῦ ὁποίου ὑπάρχει φωνήεν, παίρνοντας τὴν κατάληξιν *ing*, χάνουν τὸ τελικὸν *e*, ὅπως π.χ: α) *to shine—shining*, β) *to smoke—smoking*, γ) *to write—writing* δ) *to ride—riding*, κλπ.

Ρήματα τὰ ὁποῖα τελειώνουν στὸ ἀπαρέμφατο σὲ *ie*, παίρνοντας τὴν κατάληξιν *ing*, χάνουν τὸ τελικὸν *e*, μὲ σύγχρονον μετατροπὴν τοῦ γράμματος *i* σὲ *y*, ὅπως π.χ: α) *to die—dying*, β) *to lie—lying*, κλπ.

3. Ἡ *Past Participle* τῶν ὁμαλῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται μὲ τὴν προσθήκην στὸ τέλος τοῦ ἀπαρεμφάτου τῆς καταλήξεως *ed* ἢ μόνον τοῦ γράμματος *d*, ὅταν τὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο τοῦ ρήματος τελειῶνῃ σὲ *e*.

Γιὰ τὸν σχηματισμὸ τῆς *Past Participle* τῶν ρημάτων, σὲ *ic*, κλπ. ἰσχύουν ὅσα ἐλέγχθησαν σχετικῶς μὲ τὸν σχηματισμὸ τοῦ *Simple Pas tense* τῶν αὐτῶν ρημάτων.

Παραδείγματα:

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>	<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
to work	worked	to play	played
to smoke	smoked	to stop	stopped
to traffic	trafficked	to try	tried

Ἡ *Past Participle* τῶν ἀνωμάτων ρημάτων ἔχει ξεχωριστὸ τύπο γιὰ κάθε ρῆμα. Μερικὰ ἀνώμαλα ρήματα ἔχουν τὸν αὐτὸν τύπο στὴν *Past Participle* καὶ στὸ Ἀπαρέμφατο (Infinitive).

Παραδείγματα:

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>	<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
to eat	eaten	to sit	sat
to cut	cut	to tell	told
to shut	shut	to speak	spoken

4. Ἡ *Perfect Participle* σχηματίζεται μὲ τὴν *Present Participle* τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος to have (having) καὶ τὴν *Past Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>	<i>Perfect Participle</i>
to work	worked	having worked
to play	played	having played
to smoke	smoked	having smoked
to stop	stopped	having stopped
to traffic	trafficked	having trafficked
to try	tried	having tried
to eat	eaten	having eaten
to cut	cut	having cut

5. α) Ἡ *Present Participle* χρησιμοποιεῖται στὴν Ἀγγλικὴ γλῶσσα γιὰ τὸν σχηματισμὸ χρόνων τινῶν τῶν ρημάτων, ὅπως π.χ. τοῦ

Present Continuous (I am going, I am working, κλπ.), τοῦ *Past Continuous* (I was going, I was working κλπ.) καὶ ἄλλων.

β) Ἡ *Present Participle* χρησιμοποιεῖται μόνη της ὡς *verbal adjective* (ρηματικὸν ἐπίθετον), ὁπότε προηγεῖται οὐσιαστικοῦ τὸ ὁποῖον προσδιορίζει, ὅπως π. χ.: the *burning* house (τὸ καίόμενον σπίτι), a *daring* soldier (ἕνας τολμηρὸς στρατιώτης), a *rushing* stream (ἕνα ὀρμητικὸ ρεῦμα) κλπ.

γ) Ἡ *Present Participle* χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐνίοτε πρὸς ἀντικατάστασιν δευτερευούσης προτάσεως, ὅταν μὲ τὴν ἀντικατάστασιν αὐτὴν ἐπιζητοῦμε τὴν συντομία τοῦ λόγου.

Παραδείγματα:

— *As I was going* to town, I saw a terrible accident. (Καθὼς πήγαινα στὴν πόλιν εἶδα ἕνα τρομερὸ δυστύχημα). Στὸ παράδειγμα αὐτὸ μποροῦμε ν' ἀντικαταστήσωμεν τὴ δευτερεύουσα πρότασι «*as I was going*» μὲ τὴν *Present Participle* τοῦ ρήματος *to go* ἥτοι: *Going* to town, I saw a terrible accident.

Παρατηρήσεις:

Κατὰ τὴν ἀντικατάστασιν τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως μὲ *Present Participle* πρέπει ἡ τελευταία αὕτη νὰ εὐρίσκεται πάντοτε πρὸ τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως, διότι ἄλλως ἡ ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως μεταβάλλεται καὶ μερικὲς φορὲς καταντᾷ ἀπίθανος. Πράγματι, ἐνῶ ἡ ἔννοια ἡ ὁποία ἐκφράζεται μὲ τὸ δοθὲν παράδειγμα δὲν μεταβάλλεται καὶ ὅταν ἀκόμη ἡ δευτερεύουσα πρότασις «*As I was going to town*» τεθῇ ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴν κυρίαν πρότασιν ἥτοι ἂν γίνῃ: «I saw a terrible accident, *as I was going to town*», τοῦναντίον αὕτη (ἡ ἔννοια) μεταβάλλεται τελείως, ἂν ἡ ἀντικαθιστῶσα τὴν δευτερεύουσα πρότασιν *Present Participle* τεθῇ ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴν κυρίαν πρότασιν, ἥτοι ὅταν γίνῃ: «I saw a terrible accident, *going to town*». Διότι τότε ἡ ἔννοια τῆς τελευταίας προτάσεως εἶναι: «Εἶδα ἕνα τρομερὸ δυστύχημα ποὺ πήγαινε (τὸ δυστύχημα) πρὸς τὴν πόλιν».

— I found a pound, *as I was walking* down the street. (Ἡῦρα μιὰ λίρα καθὼς περπατοῦσα στὸ δρόμο). Ἀντικαθιστώντας τὴ δευτερεύουσα πρότασι «*as I was walking*» μὲ *Present Participle*,

θά πρέπει, για την δρθή απόδοσι τῆς ἐννοίας τοῦ δοθέντος παραδείγματος, νὰ τοποθετήσωμεν τὴν *Present Participle* στὴν ἀρχὴ τῆς ὅλης προτάσεως, ἥτοι: *Walking down the street I found a round.*

— I saw my brother *as I was driving* home. (Εἶδα τὸν ἀδελφὸ μου καθὼς πῆγαινα σπῖτι μὲ τ' αὐτοκίνητο). Ἡ δρθὴ ἀπόδοσις μὲ ἀντικατάστασι τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως «*as I was driving*» μὲ *Present Participle* εἶναι: «*Driving home, I saw my brother*»

δ) Many years ago Colómbus discovered America, *as he was sailing* across the Atlantic Ocean». Θ' ἀποδοθῇ δρθῶς. «Many years ago sailing across Atlantic Ocean Colómbus discovered America»

6. α) Ἡ *Past Participle* χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ τὸν σχηματισμὸ χρόνων τινῶν τῶν ρημάτων, ὅπως π.χ.: τοῦ *Simple Perfect* (I have worked, I have spoken, κλπ), τοῦ *Past Perfect* (I had worked, I had spoken κλπ) καὶ ἄλλων.

β) Ἡ *Past Participle* χρησιμοποιεῖται γιὰ τὸν σχηματισμὸ τῆς παθητικῆς φωνῆς (*Passive Voice*) τῶν ρημάτων (I am watched, It was sent, κλπ).

γ) Ἡ *Past Participle* χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς *Verbal adjective* (Ρηματικὸν ἐπίθετον), ὅπως π.χ. *the broken glass* (τὸ σπασμένο τζάμι-ποτήρι), *a signed application* (μιὰ ἐνυπόγραφος αἵτησις), κλπ.

δ) Ἡ *Past Participle*, χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὸ ὀριστικὸν ἄρθρον *the*, χωρὶς ν' ἀναφέρεται σὲ συγκεκριμένον οὐσιαστικόν, ὅποτε ἔχει τὴν σημασίαν οὐσιαστικοῦ στὸν πληθυντικὸν ἀριθμὸν, ὅπως π. χ.: *The educated* should help *the uneducated*. (Οἱ μορφωμένοι ὀφείλουν νὰ βοηθοῦν τοὺς ἀμορφώτους). *The wounded* were taken to the hospital. (Οἱ τραυματαῖι μετεφέρθησαν στὸ Νοσοκομεῖο). — *The well-informed* say that a new war is impossible. (Οἱ καλῶς πληροφορορημένοι λέγουν, πὼς ἕνας καινούργιος πόλεμος εἶναι ἀδύνατος).

VI. GERUND — ΓΕΡΟΥΝΔΙΟΝ

Τὸ Γερούνδιον (*Gerund*) εἶναι ρηματικὸν οὐσιαστικό. Εἶναι ὁ τύπος τῆς Present Participle τῶν ρημάτων, ὅταν χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς οὐσιαστικό.

Χρησιμοποίησις τοῦ Γεροννδίου

1. Τὸ Γερούνδιον μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῇ στὴν ἀρχὴ μιᾶς προτάσεως, ὡς ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ῥήματος αὐτῆς.

Παραδείγματα:

α) *Smoking* too much weakens the heart. (Τὸ ὑπερβολικὸ κάπνισμα ἐξασθενίζει τὴν καρδιά).

β) *Careless driving* causes accidents. (Ἀπρόσεχτη ὁδήγησις αὐτοκινήτου προκαλεῖ ἀτυχήματα).

γ) *His coming* surprised me. (Ὁ ἐρχομὸς του με ἐξέπληξε).

δ) *Swimming* is good for the health. (Τὸ κολύμπι εἶναι καλὸ γιὰ τὴν ὑγεία).

ε) *Going* to bed early is a good habit. (Τὸ νὰ πηγαίνει κανεὶς ἐνωρὶς στὸ κρεβάτι εἶναι καλὴ συνήθεια).

Καὶ στὰ πέντε παραδείγματα τὰ Γερούνδια *smoking, driving, coming, swimming* καὶ *going* χρησιμοποιοῦνται στὴν ἀρχὴ τῶν προτάσεων ὡς οὐσιαστικά καὶ εἶναι ὑποκείμενα τῶν ρημάτων τῶν προτάσεων.

2. Ὑστερα ἀπὸ πρόθεσιν ὁ μόνος τύπος τοῦ ῥήματος ποὺ ἀκολουθεῖ, εἶναι τὸ Γερούνδιο.

Παραδείγματα:

α) *Before going* to the meeting, I prepared my speech very carefully. Πρὶν πάω (πρὸ τῆς μεταβάσεώς μου) στὴ συγκέντρωσι,

προπαρασκειύασα προσεκτικά την ἀγόρευσί μου)

β) He is interested *in learning* English. (Τὸν ἐνδιαφέρει ἡ μάθησις τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς).

γ) I have no intention *of leaving* the house at this time. (Δὲν ἔχω πρόθεσι ν' ἀφήσω τὸ σπίτι αὐτὸν τὸν καιρὸ).

δ) He went out *without asking* me. (Βγήκε χωρὶς νὰ μὲ ξρωτήσῃ).

ε) He was angry *at my going* with her. (Θύμωσε μὲ τὸ νὰ πάω μαζί της).

Καὶ στὰ πέντε παραδείγματα, ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὶς προθέσεις *before, in, of, without* καὶ *at* χρησιμοποιεῖται Γερουνδίον (*going, learning, leaving, asking, going*).

3. Ὑπάρχουν ῥήματα τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ὁποῖα γίνεται χρῆσις ἀποκλειστικῶς Γερουνδίου καὶ οὐδέποτε Ἀπαρεμφάτου.

Τὰ κυριώτερα ἀπὸ τὰ ῥήματα αὐτὰ εἶνε τὰ ἑξῆς: *abhor* (συχαίνομαι), *appreciate* (ἐκτιμῶ), *avoid* (ἀποφεύγω), *deny* (ἀρνοῦμαι), *detest* (μισῶ), *dislike* (ἀντιπαθῶ), *enjoy* (ἀπολαμβάνω), *finish* (τελειώνω), *risk* (κινδυνεύω, ρισκοκινδυνεύω).

Κατὰ τὴν χρησιμοποίησιν τοῦ Γερουνδίου ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ἄνω-τέρω ῥήματα πρέπει νὰ ἔχωμεν ὑπ' ὄψιν μας τὰ ἑξῆς.

A. Ἐπὶ ταῦτοπροσωπίας μετὰ τὸ ῥῆμα χρησιμοποιοῦμεν ἀπλῶς Γερουνδίον.

Παράδειγματα.

α) I *abhor seeing* (καὶ ὄχι *to see*) murder films.

β) My friend was *driving* fast and couldn't avoid *hitting* (καὶ ὄχι *to hit*) the other car.

γ) Why did he *deny taking* (καὶ ὄχι *to take*) the book?

δ) We *dislike going* (καὶ ὄχι *to go*) to his house.

ε) My son enjoys *listening* (καὶ ὅχι *to listen*) to the radio.

στ) He has finished *reading* (καὶ ὅχι *to read*) the book yok gave him.

ζ) They shouldn't risk *going* (καὶ ὅχι *to go*) out if...

Β. Ἐπὶ ἑτεροπροσωπίας :

α) Ἐὰν τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως εἶναι προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία, χρησιμοποιοῦμεν πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ Γερούνδιο κτητικὸν ἐπίθετο, τὸ πρόσωπο τοῦ ὁποίου συμφωνεῖ μὲ τὸ πρόσωπο τοῦ ὑποκειμένου τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως.

β) Ἐὰν τὸ ὑποκείμενο τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως εἶναι οὐσιαστικόν, χρησιμοποιοῦμε πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ Γερούνδιο τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν σὲ πτῶσι γενική.

Παραδείγματα :

α) I abhor *his seeing* murder films. (Συχαίνομαι νὰ βλέπη αὐτὸς ἀστυνομικὰ φιλμ).

β) I abhor my *son's seeing* murder films. (Συχαίνομαι νὰ βλέπη ὁ γιὸς μου ἀστυνομικὰ φιλμ).

Καὶ στὰ δύο παραδείγματα τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως *I*, διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ ρήματος τῆς δευτερευούσης προτάσεως ποὺ εἶναι προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία στὸ πρῶτο παράδειγμα καὶ οὐσιαστικόν (*son*) στὸ δεύτερο. Στὸ πρῶτο παράδειγμα πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ Γερούνδιο *seeing* χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ κτητικὸν ἐπίθετον *his*, ἐνῶ στὸ δευτέρου παράδειγμα πρὶν ἀπὸ τὸ Γερούνδιο *seeing* χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *son* σὲ πτῶσι γενική.

Τὸ αὐτὸ γίνεται καὶ μὲ τὰ ἐπόμενα παραδείγματα.

γ) We dislike *his going* to her house. (Δὲν μᾶς ἀρέσει νὰ πηγαίνει αὐτὸς στὸ σπίτι της).

δ) We dislike *George's going* to her house. (Δὲν μᾶς ἀρέσει νὰ πηγαίνει ὁ Γεώργιος στὸ σπίτι της).

ε) They enjoy *my playing* football. (Τοὺς ἀρέσει νὰ παίζω φουτμπόλλ).

στ) They enjoy *Peter's playing* football. (Τοὺς ἀρέσει νὰ παίζη ὁ Πέτρος φουτμπόλλ).

4. Ὑπάρχουν ρήματα Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης ὅστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ὁποῖα εἶνε δυνατόν νὰ γίνῃ χρῆσις, εἴτε Γερουνδίου, εἴτε Ἀπαρεμφάτου. Τέτοια εἶνε τὰ ρήματα: *to begin, to cease, to continue, to hate, to love, to like, to neglect*, καὶ ἄλλα.

Παράδειγματα:

α) Next month I shall begin *to take* (ἦ: I shall begin *taking*) English lessons.

β) This factory has ceased to operate (ἦ: has ceased operating).

γ) He continued *to live* (ἦ: he continued *living*) with his parents after his marriage.

δ) I hate *to trouble* (ἦ: I hate *troubling*) you about trifles.

ε) He loves *to have* (ἦ: He loves *having*) a lot of dogs round him.

στ) I like *to read* (ἦ: I like *reading*) in bed, but I don't like *to have* (ἦ: I don't like *having*) meals in bed.

ζ) Don't neglect to write (ἦ: Don't neglect *writing*) to your mother.

Σημ.— Ἡ ἔννοια τῶν προτάσεων σὲ ὅλα τὰ παραδείγματα δὲν μεταβάλλεται, εἴτε γίνεται χρῆσις Γερουνδίου, εἴτε Ἀπαρεμφάτου.

5. Ὅστερα ἀπὸ τὰ ρήματα *to remember* καὶ *to stop* μπορεῖ νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῇ Γερουνδίο ἢ Ἀπαρέμφο.

Μὲ τὴ διαφορά, ὅτι ἡ ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως μὲ Ἀπαρέμφο εἶνε τελείως διαφορετικὴ μὲ τὴν ἔννοια αὐτῆς μὲ Γερουνδίο.

Παραδείγματα:

α) I don't want a cigarette, as *I have stopped smoking*.
(Δεν θέλω τσιγάρο, επειδή έχω σταματήσει το κάπνισμα).

β) I have done most of the work so *I shall stop now to smoke* a cigarette. (Έχω κάνει την περισσότερη δουλειά, κι' έτσι θά σταματήσω τώρα για να καπνίσω ένα τσιγάρο).

Η διαφορά της έννοιας τῶν δύο προτάσεων είναι προφανής. Στὸ πρῶτο παράδειγμα πού γίνεται χρῆσις Γερουνδίου ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα *to stop*, ἡ ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως εἶνε ὅτι «ἔχω σταματήσει νὰ καπνίζω». (Δεν καπνίζω πλέον). Ἐνῶ στὸ δεύτερο παράδειγμα, πού γίνεται χρῆσις Ἀπαρεμφάτου ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα *to stop*, ἡ ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως εἶνε ὅτι «θὰ σταματήσω γιὰ νὰ καπνίσω».

γ) I shall always remember *going* to his house. (Πάντα θὰ θυμᾶμαι τὴν μετάβασιν στὸ σπίτι του).

δ) I shall remember *to go* to his house. (Θὰ θυμηθῶ νὰ πάω σπίτι του).

Καὶ στὰ δύο τελευταῖα παραδείγματα ἡ διαφορά τῆς ἔννοιας μὲ τὴ χρῆσιν τοῦ Γερουνδίου *going* ἢ τοῦ Ἀπαρεμφάτου *to go* ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὸ ρῆμα *to remember* εἶνε προφανής.

6. Τὸ Γερούνδιο χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης ὕστερα ἀπὸ ἀπρόσωπες φράσεις, ὡς αἱ ἐπόμενες: *It is worth, it is not worth, it is no use, it is no good*.

Χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης ὕστερα ἀπὸ τίς φράσεις: *do you mind? does he mind?* κλπ. *I do not mind, you do not mind*, κλπ. *would you mind? would he mind?* κλπ.

Κατὰ τὴν χρησιμοποίησιν τοῦ Γερουνδίου, ὕστερα ἀπὸ τίς ἀνωτέρω φράσεις, πρέπει νὰ ἔχωμεν ὑπ' ὄψιν μας τὰ ἑξῆς:

α) Ὅταν ἡ ἔννοια τῆς προτάσεως, ἡ ὁποία ἀρχίζει μὲ μιὰ ἀπὸ τίς ἀνωτέρω ἀπρόσωπες φράσεις εἶναι γενικὴ, τότε ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴ φράσιν ἀκολουθεῖ ἀπλοῦν Γερούνδιο.

Τὸ αὐτὸ γίνεται ὅταν ἡ πρότασις ἀρχίζει μὲ μιὰ ἀπὸ τίς λοιπὲς φράσεις (*do you mind?* κλπ) καὶ ἐφ' ὅσον πρόκειται περὶ ταῦτοπροσωπίας.

Παραδείγματα

— It is not worth *going* to see this film. (Δὲν ἀξίζει νὰ πάει κανεὶς νὰ ἰδῇ αὐτὸ τὸ φιλμ), Ὑπονοούμενο γενική. Χρήσις τοῦ Γερουνδίου μόνου ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴν ἀπρόσωπη φράσι «it is not worth».

— It is no use *buying* cheap goods. (Δὲν ἀξίζει ν' ἀγοράζει κανεὶς φτηνὰ πράγματα). Ὑπονοούμενο γενική. Χρήσις τοῦ Γερουνδίου μόνου ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴν ἀπρόσωπη φράσι «it is no use».

— It's no good *trying* to persuade him. (Δὲν ἀξίζει τὸν κόπο νὰ προσπαθῇ κανεὶς νὰ τὸν πείσῃ). Ὑπονοούμενο γενική. Χρήσις τοῦ Γερουνδίου μόνου ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴν ἀπρόσωπη φράσι «it's no good».

— Do you mind *closing* the door? (Ἐχετε τὴν καλωσύνη νὰ κλείσετε τὴν πόρτα;). Χρήσις ἐπὶ ταυτοπροσωπίας τοῦ Γερουνδίου μόνου ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴν φράσι «do you mind?»

— Would you mind *opening* the window? (Θὰ εἴχατε τὴν καλωσύνη ν' ἀνοίξετε τὸ παράθυρο;) Χρήσις ἐπὶ ταυτοπροσωπίας τοῦ Γερουνδίου μόνου ὕστερα ἀπὸ τὴν φράσι «would you mind?»

β) Ἐὰν σὲ πρότασι, ἡ ὁποία ἀρχίζει μὲ ἀπρόσωπη φράσι, τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ Γερουνδίου εἶναι ἢ ὑπονοεῖται ὅτι εἶναι ἀντωνυμία, τότε πρὸ τοῦ Γερουνδίου χρησιμοποιοῦμε **κτητικό επίθετο**, ἐὰν ὅμως εἶνε **οὐσιαστικό**, τότε χρησιμοποιοῦμε τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν σὲ γενική πτῶσι. Τὸ αὐτὸ γίνεται καὶ ὅταν ἡ πρότασις ἀρχίζει μὲ μιὰ ἀπὸ τὰς λοιπὰς φράσεις (*do you mind?* κλπ.) καὶ ἔφ' ὅσον πρόκειται περὶ ἑτεροπροσωπίας.

Παραδείγματα

— It is worth *his going* to see this film. (Ἀξίζει νὰ πάῃ αὐτὸς νὰ ἰδῇ αὐτὸ τὸ φιλμ). Ὑποκείμενο τοῦ Γερουνδίου (ὑπονοούμενον) ἀντωνυμία προσωπική (he). Χρήσις πρὸ τοῦ Γερουνδίου τῆς κτητικῆς ἀντωνυμίας *his*.

— It is no use *her buying* cheap goods. (Δὲν ἀξίζει ν' ἀγοράζῃ αὐτὴ φτηνὰ πράγματα). Ὑποκείμενο τοῦ Γερουνδίου (ὑπονοούμενον) ἡ προσωπικὴ ἀντωνυμία *she*. Χρήσις πρὸ τοῦ Γερουνδίου τῆς κτητικῆς ἀντωνυμίας *her*.

— It is not worth the *teacher's going* to see this film. (Δὲν ἀξίζει νὰ πάη ὁ δάσκαλος νὰ ἰδῇ αὐτὸ τὸ φιλμ). Ὑποκείμενο τοῦ Γερουνδίου τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *teacher*. Χρῆσις πρὸ τοῦ Γερουνδίου τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ αὐτοῦ σὲ πτῶσι γενικῇ (*teacher's*).

— It is no use *my son's going* to this school. (Δὲν ἀξίζει νὰ πάη ὁ γυιὸς μου σ' αὐτὸ τὸ σχολεῖο). Ὑποκείμενο τοῦ Γερουνδίου τὸ οὐσιαστικὸν *son*. Χρῆσις πρὸ τοῦ Γερουνδίου τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ αὐτοῦ σὲ πτῶσι γενικῇ (*my son's*),

— Do you mind *my closing* the door? (Θὰ σᾶς πείραζε νὰ κλείσω τὴν πόρτα;) Ὑποκείμενο τοῦ Γερουνδίου (ὑπονοούμενον) ἄνθρωπος ἀ' προσώπου (I) διαφέρουσα ἀπὸ τὸ πρόσωπο τοῦ ὑποκειμένου τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος (β' πρόσωπο) (έτεροπροσωπία). Χρῆσις πρὸ τοῦ Γερουνδίου τοῦ κτητικοῦ ἐπιθέτου *my*.

— Do you mind *the children's waiting* here? (Σᾶς πειράζει νὰ περιμένουν ἔδῳ τὰ παιδιά;). Ὑποκείμενο τοῦ Γερουνδίου οὐσιαστικόν, τὸ πρόσωπο τοῦ ὁποίου (γ' πρόσωπο) διαφέρει ἀπὸ τὸ πρόσωπο τοῦ ὑποκειμένου τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος (β' πρόσωπο) (έτεροπροσωπία). Χρῆσις πρὸ τοῦ Γερουνδίου τοῦ οὐσιαστικοῦ σὲ πτῶσι γενικῇ (*children's*),

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ ΙΧ

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΧΡΗΣΕΩΣ ΤΟΥ ΑΠΑΡΕΜΦΑΤΟΥ (INFINITIVE) ΚΑΙ ΤΟΥ ΓΕΡΟΥΝΔΙΟΥ (GERUND)

1. Complete the following sentences by using the verbs in brackets either as Infinitives or Gerunds as required.

(Αἱ ἐπόμενες προτάσεις νὰ συμπληρωθοῦν χρησιμοποιουμένων ἀναλόγως τῶν ἐντὸς παρενθέσεων ρημάτων ὡς Ἀπαρεμφάτων ἢ Γερουνδίων)

1. Complete absorption of light makes a thing (*to appear*) black.
2. Peter is acknowledged (*to be*) the cleverest boy in the class.
3. You must (*to acquaint*) yourself with your new duties.
4. The thief was caught in the act of (*to take*) the money.
5. The action of sunlight on certain materials is used (*to make*) photographs.
6. A door was banging somewhere and I couldn't (*to get*) (*to sleep*).
7. I thought I heard someone (*to call*).
8. I saw some boys (*to steal*) flowers from my garden.
9. See that boat (*to dance*) on the waves.
10. It required a great effort of will (*to stop*) (*to smoke*).
11. I fall out of my element when people begin (*to talk*) about economics.
12. What could I (*to do*) in face of all these difficulties?
13. He has great facility in (*to learn*) languages.
14. Fair play means (*to behave*) and (*to act*) honestly.
15. He fancies that he can (*to succeed*) without (*to work*) hard.
16. Ask your brother whether he minds (*to come*) back this afternoon.
17. My son enjoys (*to listen*) to the radio.
18. As soon as they saw me they stopped (*to talk*).
19. I should appreciate (*to receive*) an answer immediately.
- 20.

They will finish (*to paint*) our apartment next week. 21. My son was driving fast and couldn't avoid (*to hit*) the other car. 22. Why to you deny (*to take*) this book? 23. Some people say that (*to smoke*) is a bad habit. 24. Don't let the children (*to fall*) into bad habits. 25. I hate (*to trouble*) you. 26. I won't have you (*to say*) such things about me. 27. That book is well worth (*to read*). 28. I was prevented from (*to finish*) my work by illness. 29. I neglected (*to speak*) to him about the matter. 30. I prefer (*to meet*) you at five o'clock instead of at six.

II. Change the heavily-printed phrases into Infinitives or Gerunds as required.

(Αἱ ζωοῦσες τυπωμέναι φράσεις νὰ μετατραποῦν εἰς Ἀπαρέμφατα ἢ Γερουνδία).

1. I remember *that I spoke to him* about the accident. 2. They admitted *that they were* wrong. 3. He confessed *that he had stolen* the money. 4. After *he had killed* his enemy, the savage hacked the body to pieces. 5. He insisted *that I wait* for him. 6. I hope you understand the reason *I was* late. 7. They decided *that they would take* an early train. 8. He admitted *that he made* the mistake. 9. He finally admitted *that he had received* the letter. 10. The prisoner denied *that he had taken* part in the riot. 11. I was greatly surprised *that he failed* his examination. 12. I forgot *that you said* that to me. 13. Her brother was very much pleased *that he won* the contest. 14. My son denies *that he had been* with your daughter in the cinema. 15. I recommend *that you buy* that house. 16. I prefer *that I take* English lessons from you.

PASSIVE VOICE—ΠΑΘΗΤΙΚΗ ΦΩΝΗ

Παθητικὴν φωνὴν ἔχουν μόνον τὰ μεταβατικὰ ρήματα, ὅπως εἶναι π.χ. τὰ ρήματα *to help* (βοηθῶ), *to like* (ἀγαπῶ), *to take* (λαμβάνω) καὶ ἄλλα.

ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ ΚΑΙ ΚΛΙΣΙΣ

Ἡ Παθητικὴ φωνὴ τῶν ρημάτων σχηματίζεται καὶ κλίνεται μὲ τοὺς χρόνους τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* καὶ τὴν *Past Participle* τοῦ ρήματος.

Παράδειγμα:

Παθητικὴ φωνὴ τοῦ ρήματος *to help*. Δίδομεν τὸ πρῶτο πρόσωπον ἐνικοῦ ἐκάστου χρόνου τοῦ ρήματος εἰς ὅλας τὰς μορφάς (καταφατικὴν, ἀρνητικὴν κλπ.), καθὼς καὶ εἰς τοὺς δύο τύπους καθ' ἑκάστην χρόνον, ἦτοι, *Simple* καὶ *Continuous*. Ὁ τελευταῖος τύπος, *Continuous*, παραλείπεται, ὅπου δὲν χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅπως στὸν *Present Perfect*, *Past Perfect*, *Future Perfect* καὶ ἄλλους χρόνους. Ἡ κλίσις τοῦ ρήματος εἰς τὰ λοιπὰ πρόσωπα ἐνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ εἶναι ἀπλῆ. Ἀκολουθεῖ τὴν κλίσι τῶν ἀντιστοίχων χρόνων καὶ μορφῶν τοῦ βοηθητικοῦ ρήματος *to be* μὲ τὴν *Past Participle* τοῦ ρήματος *to help* (*helped*) στὸ τέλος.

1. INDICATIVE MOOD (ΟΡΙΣΤΙΚΗ)

PRESENT TENSE

Simple

Continuous

1. Καταφατικὴ μορφή

I am helped

I am being helped

Simple

Continuous

2. 'Αρνητική μορφή

I am not helped

I am not being helped

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή

am I helped?

am I being helped?

4. 'Αρνητικο - έρωτηματική μορφή

am I not helped?

am I not being helped?

PAST TENSE

Simple

Continuous

1. Καταφατική μορφή

I was helped

I was being helped

2. 'Αρνητική μορφή

I was not helped

I was not being helped

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή

was I helped?

was I being helped?

4. 'Αρνητικο - έρωτηματική μορφή

was I not helped?

was I not being helped?

PRESENT PERFECT TENSE

1. Καταφατική μορφή.

I have been helped

2. 'Αρνητική μορφή.

I have not been helped

3. 'Ερωτηματική μορφή.

have I been helped?

4. 'Αρνητ.-έρωτηματ. μορφή.

have I not been helped?

PAST PERFECT TENSE

1. Καταφ. μορφή.

I had been helped

2. 'Αρνητ. μορφή.

I had not been helped

3. 'Ερωτ. μορφή.

had I been helped?

4. 'Αρνητ.-έρωτηματ. μορφή.

had I not been helped?

FUTURE TENSE

- | | |
|---------------------------|------------------------|
| 1. Καταφ. μορφή. | I shall be helped |
| 2. 'Αρνητ. μορφή. | I shall not be helped |
| 3. 'Ερωτημ. μορφή. | shall I be helped? |
| 4. 'Αρνητ.-έρωτημ. μορφή. | shall I not be helped? |

FUTURE PERFECT TENSE

- | | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1. Καταφατ. μορφή. | I shall have been helped |
| 2. 'Αρνητ. μορφή. | I shall not have been helped |
| 3. 'Ερωτημ. μορφή. | shall I have been helped? |
| 4. 'Αρνητ.-έρωτημ. μορφή. | shall I not have been helped? |

FUTURE IN THE PAST (OR: CONDITIONAL TENSE)

- | | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. Καταφατ. μορφή. | I should be helped |
| 2. 'Αρνητ. μορφή. | I should not be helped |
| 3. 'Ερωτημ. μορφή. | should I be helped? |
| 4. 'Αρνητ.-έρωτημ. μορφή. | should I not be helped? |

FUTURE PERFECT IN THE PAST

(OR: PAST CONDITIONAL TENSE)

- | | |
|---------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. Καταφ. μορφή. | I should have been helped |
| 2. 'Αρνητ. μορφή. | I should not have been helped |
| 3. 'Ερωτημ. μορφή. | should I have been helped? |
| 4. 'Αρνητ.-έρωτημ. μορφή. | should I not have been helped? |

II. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD (ΥΠΟΤΑΚΤΙΚΗ)

PRESENT TENSE	
<i>Simple</i>	<i>Continuous</i>
1. Καταφατική μορφή	
(if) I be helped	δὲν ὑπάρχει
2. Ἀρνητική μορφή	
(if) I be not helped	δὲν ὑπάρχει

Παρατήρησις:

Εἰς ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα, ἑνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ, τὸ βοηθητικὸ ῥῆμα παραμένει ἀμετάβλητο, ἦτοι: I be, you be, he (she, it) be, κλπ.

PAST TENSE	
<i>Simple</i>	<i>Continuous</i>
1. Καταφατική μορφή	
(if) I were helped	(if) I were being helped
2. Ἀρνητική μορφή	
(if) I were not helped	(if) I were not being helped

Παρατήρησις:

Εἰς ὅλα τὰ πρόσωπα, ἑνικοῦ καὶ πληθυντικοῦ, τὸ βοηθητικὸ ῥῆμα παραμένει ἀμετάβλητο, ἦτοι: I were, you were, he were, κλπ.

III. IMPERATIVE MOOD (ΠΡΟΣΤΑΚΤΙΚΗ)

- Καταφ. μορφή. let me be helped
be helped
let him, (her, it, us, them) be helped

2. Ἀρνητ. μορφή. do not let me be helped
do not be helped
do not let him (her, it, us, them) be helped
-

IV. INFINITIVE (ΑΠΑΡΕΜΦΑΤΟΝ)

- Present Tense* : to be helped
Perfect Tense : to have been helped
-

V. PARTICIPLE (ΜΕΤΟΧΗ)

- Present Participle* : being helped
Perfect Participle : having being helped
-

ΧΡΗΣΙΜΟΠΟΙΗΣΙΣ ΤΗΣ PASSIVE VOICE

1. Για τὴν χρησιμοποίησι τῶν χρόνων τῆς *Passive Voice* ἰσχύουν, ὅσα ἔχουν λεχθῇ καὶ γιὰ τὴν χρησιμοποίησι τῶν ἀντιστοίχων χρόνων τῆς *Indicative Mood*. (Ὁριστικῆς).

2. Ἡ *Passive Voice* χρησιμοποιεῖται κυρίως, ὅταν στὴν *Active Voice* τὸ ὑποκείμενον εἶναι ἄγνωστον.

ΜΕΤΑΤΡΟΠΗ ΠΡΟΤΑΣΕΩΣ ΑΠΟ ΤΗΝ ACTIVE VOICE
ΣΕ PASSIVE VOICE

1. Κατὰ τὴν μετατροπὴ μιᾶς προτάσεως ἀπὸ τὴν *Active Voice* (ἐνεργητικὴν φωνήν) στὴν *Passive Voice* (Παθητικὴν φωνήν):

α) Ὁ χρόνος τοῦ ρήματος τῆς *Active Voice* παραμένει ὁ αὐτός καὶ στὴν *Passive Voice*.

β) Τὸ ὑποκείμενο τοῦ κυρίου ρήματος τῆς *Active Voice* γίνεται στὴν *Passive Voice* ἀντικείμενο καὶ ἀντιστρόφως τὸ ἀντικείμενο γίνεται ὑποκείμενο. Πρὸ τοῦ ἀντικειμένου στὴν *Passive Voice* χρησιμοποιεῖται κατ' ἀρχὴν ἡ πρόθεσις *by*.

Παραδείγματα:

α) I saw him last night (Τὸν εἶδα χθὲς βράδυ). (Act. Voice).—He was seen by me last night. (Ἐθεάθη ἀπὸ μένα χθὲς βράδυ). (Passive voice). Τὸ ὑποκείμενο *I* τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς γίνεται ἀντικείμενο *me* τῆς παθητικῆς. Πρὸ τοῦ ἀντικειμένου *me* ἡ πρόθεσις *by*. Ὁ χρόνος τοῦ ρήματος (Past Tense) παραμένει ὁ αὐτός.

β) She has written a book. (Ἔχει γράψει ἓνα βιβλίο). (Act. Voice).—A book has been written by her. (Ἐνα βιβλίο ἔχει γραφῆ ἀπὸ αὐτήν). (Passive Voice). Τὸ ὑποκείμενο *she* τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς γίνεται ἀντικείμενο, *her*, τῆς παθητικῆς. Πρὸ τοῦ ἀντικειμένου *her* ἡ πρόθεσις *by*. Ὁ χρόνος τοῦ ρήματος (Present Perfect) ὁ αὐτός.

γ) We shall give the money. (Θὰ δώσωμεν τὰ χρήματα). (Act. Voice).—The money will be given by us (Τὰ χρήματα θὰ δοθοῦν ἀπὸ ἡμᾶς). (Passive Voice). Τὸ ὑποκείμενο, *we*, τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς φωνῆς γίνεται ἀντικείμενο, *us*, τῆς παθητικῆς. Πρὸ τοῦ ἀντικειμένου *us* ἡ πρόθεσις *by*. Ὁ χρόνος τοῦ ρήματος (Future Tense) ὁ αὐτός.

2. Ὅταν στὴν πρότασι τῆς *Active Voice* ὑπάρχουν δύο ἀντικεί-

μενα, ένα ἔμμεσο καὶ ἓνα ἄμεσο, τότε στὴν Passive Voice μπορούμε νὰ χρησιμοποιήσωμεν ὡς ὑποκείμενον ὁποιοδήποτε ἀπὸ τὰ δυὸ ἀντικείμενα.

Παραδείγματα:

a) He gave me a letter. (Μοῦ ἔδωσε μιὰ ἐπιστολή). (Act. Voice).—I was given a letter by him (Passive Voice). ἢ: A letter was given to me by him. (Passive Voice).

Στὴν πρώτη μετατροπὴ χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς ὑποκείμενο τῆς Passive Voice (*I*) τὸ ἔμμεσον ἀντικείμενο τῆς ἐνεργητικῆς, (*me*). Στὴ δευτέρα μετατροπὴ χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς ὑποκείμενο τῆς Passive Voice (*a letter*) τὸ ἄμεσον ἀντικείμενο τῆς Active Voice (*a letter*).

b) I told him the news. (Τοῦ εἶπα τὰ νέα). (Active Voice). He was told the news by me. (Passive Voice). ἢ: The news was told to him by me (Passive Voice).

3. Ὅταν τὸ ἀντικείμενο μιᾶς προτάσεως τῆς Active Voice εἶναι ὁλόκληρη (δευτερεύουσα) πρότασις, τότε στὴν Passive Voice, ὡς ὑποκείμενο τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως χρησιμοποιεῖται ἡ ἀντωνυμία *it*. Ἡ δευτερεύουσα πρότασις παραμένει ἀμετάβλητη.

Παραδείγματα:

a) I believe that flying will soon be very cheap. (Πιστεύω πὺς σύντομα ἡ πτήσις θὰ εἶναι πολὺ φθηνή). (Active Voice).—It is believed by me that flying will soon be very cheap. (Passive Voice). Ὑποκείμενο τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως στὴν Passive Voice ἡ ἀντωνυμία *it*. Ἡ δευτερεύουσα πρότασις (that flying...) παραμένει ἀμετάβλητη.

b) The newspapers report that the Prime Minister is ill. (Αἱ ἡμερησίδες δημοσιεύουν πὺς ὁ πρωθυπουργὸς εἶναι ἀρρωστός). (Active Voice).—It is reported by the newspapers that the Prime Minister is ill. (Passive Voice). Ὑποκείμενο τῆς κυρίας προτάσεως στὴν Passive Voice ἡ ἀντωνυμία *it*. Ἡ δευτερεύουσα πρότασις (that the Prime Minister...) παραμένει ἀμετάβλητη.

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ Χ.

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΠΑΘΗΤΙΚΗΣ ΦΩΝΗΣ

A. Change the following sentences from Active to Passive Voice.

1. The teacher punished the student. 2. The police captured the thief. 3. My son wrote his lesson. 4. His uncle adopted him. 5. Everybody disturbed him. 6. The teacher gave each of the boys a book. 7. I shall deliver the letter to him. 8. An unknown person stole the money. 9. The doctor saved his son's life. 10. Big banks of snow stopped our motor-car. 11. A bus knocked down and hurt my friend. 12. The newspapers reported the event immediately. 13. The teacher could not understand my handwriting. 14. I cannot consider your proposal on the matter at this time. 15. His enthusiasm carried him away.

B. Change the following sentences from Passive to Active Voice.

1. My pencil has been taken. 2. His work was begun at six o'clock. 3. The cries of the boys were heard. 4. This work can't be finished today. 5. This place was held bravely by our soldiers. 6. The meal is being prepared by the cook. 7. I must be helped by your brother. 8. An angry look was thrown at me by him. 9. Things must be taken by us as they are. 10. The merchandise may be delivered tomorrow. 11. The city was defended by them against the enemy. 12. Wonders will be done by patience and hard work. 13. The smoke was blown away by the wind. 14. Those chairs cannot be put in this room. 15. A new group may be organized next week.

ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΝ ΕΚΤΟΝ

ADVERB — ΕΠΙΡΡΗΜΑ

A. *Adverb* (Ἐπίρρημα) εἶναι λέξεις ἡ ὁποία ἀναφέρεται σὲ ῥῆμα ἢ ἐπίθετο, ἢ ἄλλο ἐπίρρημα, ἢ ἐπιρρηματικὴ φράσι (*adverbial phrase*), τῶν ὁποίων ἐνίοτε τροποποιεῖ τὴν ἔννοια.

B. Τὰ Ἐπιρρήματα εἶναι κυρίως πέντε εἰδῶν.

α) *Adverbs of maner*. (τροπικὰ ἐπιρρήματα), ὅπως π.χ.: *badly* (κακῶς), *easily* (εὐκόλως), *gaily* (εὐθύμως), κλπ.

β) *Adverbs of place*. (τοπικὰ ἐπιρρήματα), ὅπως π.χ.: *here* (ἑδῶ), *there*, (ἐκεῖ), *outside* (ἔξω) κλπ.

γ) *Adverbs of time*. (χρονικὰ ἐπιρρήματα), ὅπως π.χ.: *always* (πάντοτε), *often* (συνά), *yesterday* (χθές) κλπ.

δ) *Adverbs of quantity*. (ποσοτικὰ ἐπιρρήματα), ὅπως π.χ.: *much* (πολὺ) *enough* (ἀρκετά), κλπ.

ε) *Adverbs of interrogation* (Ἐρωτηματικὰ ἐπιρρήματα), ὅπως π.χ.: *where*; (ποῦ);, *when*? (πότε;), κλπ.

Γ. Πολλὰ ἐπιρρήματα σχηματίζονται ἀπὸ Ἐπίθετα (*adjectives*) διὰ τῆς προσθήκης τῆς καταλήξεως *ly*. Μερικὰ ἐπιρρήματα σχηματίζονται ἀπὸ Μετοχὰς (*Participles*) διὰ τῆς προσθήκης ἐπίσης τῆς καταλήξεως *ly*.

Ὅταν τὸ ἐπίθετο τελειῶνῃ σὲ *y* τότε στὸ ἀντίστοιχον ἐπίρρημα τὸ *y* μετατρέπεται σὲ *i*, ὅταν τὸ ἐπίθετο τελειώνει σὲ *le* τότε τὸ ἀντίστοιχον ἐπίρρημα παίρνει τὸ *y* παραλειπομένου τοῦ τελικοῦ *e* τοῦ ἐπιθέτου.

Παραδείγματα:

Επίθετον	Ἐπίρρημα	Μετοχή	Ἐπίρρημα
bad	badly	loving	lovingly
sweet	sweetly	feeling	feelingly
happy	happily	daring	daringly
easy	easily	admitted	admittedly
gentle	gently	repeated	repeatedly

Δ. Τὰ ἐπίθετα *fast* (ταχύς), *low* (χαμηλός), καὶ *straight* (εὐθύς, ἕσιος), ἔχουν ἀντίστοιχα ἐπιρρήματα μὲ τὸν αὐτὸν τύπον, ἥτοι: *fast* (ταχέως), *low* (χαμηλὰ) καὶ *straight* (εὐθέως).

Παραδείγματα

Ἐπίθετον - adjective

Ἐπίρρημα - Adverb

- α) He is a *fast* driver. (Εἶναι ταχύς ὁδηγός). He drives *fast*. (Ὁδηγεῖ ταχέως).
- β) That is a *low* tree. (Αὐτὸ ἐκεῖ εἶναι χαμηλὸ δένδρον). The aeroplane flew *low*. (Τὸ ἀεροπλάνο πέταξε χαμηλὰ).
- γ) This is a *straight* road. (Αὐτὸς εἶναι εὐθύς δρόμος). The road runs *straight*. (Ὁ δρόμος πηγαίνει κατ' εὐθεΐαν).

Ε. Μερικὰ ἐπιρρήματα προερχόμενα ἐξ ἐπιθέτων ἔχουν δυὸ διαφορετικούς τύπους. Ὁ ἕνας εἶναι ὁ αὐτὸς τύπος τοῦ ἐπιθέτου καὶ ὁ δεύτερος προέρχεται ἀπὸ τὸ ἐπίθετον μὲ τὴν προσθήκην τῆς καταλήξεως *ly*. Οἱ δυὸ αὐτοὶ τύποι τῶν ἐπιρρημάτων ἔχουν συνήθως διαφορετικὴ ἔννοια.

Παραδείγματα:

Ἐπίθετον - Adjective

Ἐπιρρήματα - Adverbs

- 1) *hard* (σκληρός) α) He works *hard* for me. (Δουλεύει σκληρὰ γιὰ μένα).
- β) He *hardly* works for me. (Μόλις δουλεύει γιὰ μένα-σχεδὸν δὲν δουλεύει).

Ἐπίθετον - Adjective

Ἐπιρρήματα - Adverbs

- 2) *direct* (εὐθύς). α) I sent the book *direct* to him. (Ἔστειλα τὸ βιβλίο **κατ' εὐθείαν** σ' αὐτόν).
β) I will send the book *directly*. (Θὰ στείλω τὸ βιβλίον **ἀμέσως**).
- 3) *late* (βραδύς). α) He came *late* to his office. (Ἦλθε **ἄργα** στὸ γραφεῖο του).
β) I have not had any letters *lately*. (Δὲν ἔχω λάβει ἐπιστολὲς **τελευταίως**).
- 4) *short* (βραχύς). α) He stopped *short*. (Σταμάτησεν **ἀπότομα**).
β) He will come *shortly*. (Θὰ ἔλθῃ σὲ **λίγο**).
- 5) *cheap* (φθηνός). α) I bought it *cheap*. (Τὸ ἀγόρασα **φθηνά**).
β) I bought it *cheaply*. (Τὸ ἀγόρασα **φθηνά**).
- 6) *pretty* (ώρατος). α) This work is *pretty* good. (Αὐτὴ ἡ δουλειὰ εἶναι **ἀρκετὰ** καλὴ).
β) This girl sang *prettily*. (Αὐτὸ τὸ κορίτσι τραγούδησε **νόστιμα**).
- 7) *near* (πλησίον). α) I like to sit *near* the window. (Μ' ἀρέσει νὰ κάθημαι **σιμὰ** στὸ παράθυρο).
β) Speak quietly, he is *nearly* asleep. (Μιλήστε σιγά, **σχεδὸν** κοιμάται).

ΣΤ. Μερικὲς λέξεις τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς χρησιμοποιοῦνται ἄλλοτε ὡς **ἐπιρρήματα** (Adverbs) καὶ ἄλλοτε ὡς **προθέσεις** (Prepositions), ὅπως π.χ. αἱ λέξεις *about, above, across, after* κλπ. Ἐξ αὐτῶν πάλιν τινὲς χρησιμοποιοῦνται καὶ ὡς ἄλλα μέρη τοῦ λόγου.

Δίδομεν κατωτέρω τὶς λέξεις αὐτὰς μὲ παραδείγματα χρησιμοποιοῦσέως των ὡς **ἐπιρρημάτων**.

1. *about*. α) I bring *about* (προξενῶ, προκαλῶ, φέρω εἰς πέρας).—what *brought about* the quarrel? (Τὶ προκαλέσεν τὴ φιλονικίαν;). β) Something *comes about*. (Κάτι συμβαίνει). The event *came about* in this way. (Τὸ συμβάν ἔγινεν ὡς ἑξῆς). γ) I go *about*. (περιφέρομαι, κυκλοφορῶ).—*He's going about* with a French

girl. (Περιφέρεται—κάνει παρέα—μὲ μιὰ Γαλλίδα).—A story is going about, that... (Μιὰ φήμη κυκλοφορεῖ, ὅτι...). δ) *I look about.* (ἀναζητῶ, ψάχνω παντοῦ). *He looked about* for the lost book. (Αναζήτησε παντοῦ τὸ χαμένο βιβλίο). ε) *I put a ship about.* (*Ἀλλάζω τὴν κατεύθυνσι ἐνὸς πλοίου). στ) *I throw about.* (σκορπίζω ἐδῶ κι' ἐκεῖ). *He throws his money about.* (Σκορπίζει ἐδῶ κι' ἐκεῖ τὰ χρήματά του). ζ) *I turn about* (Κάνω μεταβολή). η) *I walk about* (περιφέρομαι).

2. *above.* α) The top is about five hundred feet above. (*Ἡ κορυφή βρίσκεται περίπου 500 πόδια ψηλά). β) My bedroom is just above. (Τὸ ὑπνοδωμάτιό μου βρίσκεται ἀκριβῶς ἐπάνω—στὸ ἐπάνω πάτωμα). γ) the above cited passages. (αἱ ἀνωτέρω ἀναφερθεῖσαι περικοπές).

3) *across.* α) The river is a mile across. (Τὸ ποτάμι ἔχει πλάτος ἐνὸς μιλίου). β) *I put something across.* (ἐπιτυγχάνω σὲ κάτι).—I thought he would fail, but he contrived to put it across. (Νόμισα πὼς θ' ἀποτύγχανε, ὅμως κατάφερε νὰ πετύχῃ). γ) *I stand with arms across.* (Στέκομαι μὲ χέρια σταυρωμένα).

4. *after.* α) He fell ill on Monday and died three days after. (*Ἐπεσε ἄρρωστος τῇ Δευτέρᾳ καὶ πέθανε τρεῖς μέρες ὕστερα). β) what comes after? (Τὶ ἔρχεται κατόπιν;).

5. *along.* α) *I get along.* (προχωρῶ, προοδεύω—συμφωνῶ, τὰ πηγαίνω καλά). He seems to be getting along well in his business. (Φαίνεται νὰ προοδεύῃ στὶς δουλειές του).—These two brothers never could get along. (Αὐτὰ τὰ δυὸ ἀδελφία δὲν μπόρεσαν ποτὲ νὰ τὰ πᾶνε καλά—νὰ συμφωνήσουν). β) *I get along with something* (Τὰ καταφέρνω—τὰ βγάζω πέρα—μὲ κάτι, προοδεύω σὲ κάτι). γ) *I go along.* (προχωρῶ, προοδεύω). You may have difficulty with this book at first, but you'll find it easier as you go along. (Δυνατὸν νὰ δυσκολευθῇτε στὴν ἀρχὴ μ' αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίο, θὰ τὸ βρῆτε ὅμως πῶς εὐκόλο, ἐφ' ὅσον προχωρῆτε). δ) *I go along with someone.* (Συνοδεύω κάποιον).

6. *before*. α) I have seen him *before*. (Τὸν εἶδα πρὶν).—β) It had been fine the day *before*. (Ἡ χθεςινὴ ἡμέρα ἦταν ὥραία). γ) long *before* (πρὸ πολλοῦ).

7. *behind*. α) He looked *behind* (Κύτταξε πίσω). β) Have you left anything *behind*? (Ἀφήσατε—λησμονήσατε—τίποτε πίσω;) γ) I am *behind* in my work. (Εἶμαι καθυστερημένος στὴ δουλειά μου).

8. *below*. α) From the top of the hill, we can see the blue ocean *below*. (Ἀπὸ τὴν κορυφὴ τοῦ λόφου μπορούμε νὰ ἰδοῦμε κάτω τὸν γαλάζιο ὠκεανό). β) a few miles *below*. (Λίγα μίλια πρὶς κάτω). γ) as stated *below*. (ὡς ἀναφέρεται κατωτέρω).

9. *besides*. α) and several others *besides*. (καὶ πολλοὶ ἄλλοι ἀκόμη). β) *Besides* he is not a saint himself. (Ἄλλωστε δὲν εἶναι καὶ ἅγιος).

10. *between*. α) two slices with a bit of ham *between*. (Δυὸ φέτες μὲ λίγο ζαμπὸν στὴ μέση). β) I serve as a *go-between* (Χρησιμεύω ὡς μεσάζων). γ) I *stand between*. (παρεμβαίνω).

11. *by*. α) I *put* something *by*. (Βάζω κάτι κατὰ μέρος). β) He hid the money when nobody *was by*. (Ἐκρυψε τὰ χρήματα, ὅταν δὲν ἦταν κανεὶς σιμά). γ) I *march by*. (παρελαύνω).

12. *down*. α) I *go down*. (κατεβαίνω). β) I *fall down*. (πέφτω). γ) I *put* something *down*. (Ἀποθέτω κάτι). δ) The sun *is down*. (Ὁ ἥλιος ἔδυσε. ε) I *am down* with an illness. (Εἶμαι στὸ κρεβάτι ἀπὸ ἀρρώστεια). στ) Prices *are down*. (Αἱ τιμὲς πέφτουν). ζ) I *put down* a rebellion. (Καταπνίγω μιὰ ἀνταρσία). η) I *hiss down* an orator. (Ἀποδοκιμάζω ἕνα ρήτορα). θ) The clock *has run down*. (Τὸ ὥρολόγι ξεκουρδίστηκε). ι) I *pay down*. (Πληρώνω τοῖς μετρητοῖς).

13. *in*. α) Is anyone *in*? (Εἶναι κανεὶς μέσα;). β) Is the fire *in*? (Ἐξακολουθεῖ νὰ καίη ἡ φωτιά;). γ) Is the train *in*? (Ἐφθασε

τὸ τραῖνο;) δ) when the liberals *were in*. (Ὅταν οἱ φιλελεύθεροι ἦσαν στήν ἀρχή). ε) *I keep in* with someone. (Διατηρῶ καλὲς σχέσεις μὲ κάποιον).

14. *inside*. α) Go *inside*. (Πήγαινε μέσα). β) *inside* of a month. (ἐντὸς μηνὸς—πρὶν περάσει μῆνας).

15. *off*. α) I *take myself off* (I *make off*). (Ἀναχωρῶ). β) *off* with you! (Δίνε το! στρίβε! φύγε!). γ) I *take my coat off*. (Βγάζω τὸ σακάκι μου). δ) *He has paid off* his debts. (ἔξωφλησε τὰ χρέη του).

16. *on*. α) I *put my hat on*. (Βάζω τὸ καπέλλο μου). β) I *go on* (Συνεχίζω). γ) I *speak on*. (Συνεχίζω τὴν ὁμιλίαν). δ) *and so on* (καὶ οὕτω καθ' ἑξῆς). ε) What plays *are on* now? (Τὶ ἔργα παίζονται τώρα;) στ) I *turn the light on* (Ἀνάβω τὸ φῶς).

17. *out*. Ἡ λέξις *out* μόνη τῆς χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς ἐπίρρημα. Μὲ τὴν of, ἦτοι *out of* χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς πρόθεσις. α) *He was out* in the rain. (Ἦταν ἔξω στὴ βροχή). β) The secret *is out* now. (Τὸ μυστικὸ εἶναι γνωστὸ τώρα). γ) The news *will put him out*. (Τὰ νέα θὰ τὸν συνταράξουν). δ) *Speak out!* (Μιλήστε δυνατά). ε) I *have it out* with someone. (Ἐξηγοῦμαι σαφῶς μὲ κάποιον). στ) He would not *hear me out*. (Δὲν θέλησε νὰ μ' ἀκούσῃ ἕως τὸ τέλος). ζ) The fire *is out*. (Ἡ φωτιὰ ἔσβυσε).

18. *outside*. α) It is painted *outside* only. (Εἶναι βαμμένο μόνον ἐξωτερικῶς). β) He *tried to get outside*. (Προσπάθησε νὰ βγῇ).

19. *over*. α) I *lean over*. (σκύβω). β) I *am all over* with someone. (Τὰ ἔχω χαλάσει μὲ κάποιον). γ) I *knock something over*. (Ἀνατρέπω κάτι). δ) I *am boiling over* with rage. (Βράζω ἀπὸ θυμό). ε) I *will look it over*. (Θὰ τὸ ρίξω μιὰ ματιά). στ) I *am nearly over*. (Πλησιάζω σχεδὸν στὸ τέλος). ζ) *It is all over* with him. (Πάει αὐτὸς—πέθανε).

20. *past*. α) The troops *marched past*. (Τὰ στρατεύματα

παρήλασαν). β) *He walked past* without noticing me. (Προσπέρασε χωρίς να με αντιληφθῇ).

21. *since*. α) I have been his friend ever *since*. (Ἐκτοτε ὑπῆρξα πάντα φίλος του). β) I knew him long *since*. (Τὸν γνώρισα πρὸ πολλοῦ). γ) He left Athens in 1950 and I haven't seen him *since*. (Ἐγκατέλειψε τὰς Ἀθήνας τὸ 1950 καὶ ἔκτοτε δὲν τὸν εἶδα).

22. *through*. α) The crowd was so dense shat I could not *get through*. (Τὸ πλῆθος ἦτο τόσο πυκνὸν ὥστε δὲν μπόρεσα νὰ περάσω). β) *I fall (drop) through*. (ἀποτυγχάνω, καταρρέω). γ) *I am wet through*. (Εἶμαι βρεγμένος ἕως τὸ κόκκαλο). δ) *I read a book through*. (Διοβάζω ἓνα βιβλίο ἀπ' τὴν ἀρχὴ ἕως τὸ τέλος). ε) *I go through* with something. (Φέρω εἰς πέρας κάτι). στ) *I am through* with him. (Τὰ χάλασα μαζί του).

23. *throughout*. α) He kept to the sameline *throughout*. (Ἐτήρησε τὴν ἴδια γραμμὴ πέρα γιὰ πέρα). β) The statue was solid silver *throughout*. (Τὸ ἄγαλμα ὁλόκληρο ἦτο ἀπὸ ἄργυρο), (ἀπὸ ἀτόφιο ἄργυρο).

24) *to*. α) *Is the door to?* (Εἶναι κλειστὴ ἡ πόρτα); β) *to* and *fro*. (ἐμπρὸς καὶ πίσω).

25. *under*. α) boys of fifteen and *under*. (ἄγῳρια ἡλικίας 15 ἐτῶν καὶ κάτω).—β) The ship *went under*. (Τὸ πλοῖο βυθίστηκε). γ) *I go under*, (Πνίγομαι.—μεταφ: πνίγομαι οἰκονομικῶς).

26. *up*. α) The smoke *rose up*. (ὁ καπνὸς ἀνέρχετο). β) *He is up* at the top of the class. (Εἶναι ἐπὶ κεφαλῇς τῆς τάξεως). γ) The sun *is up* already. (Ὁ ἥλιος ἔχει ἀνατεῖλει ἤδη). δ) *I stand up*. (Σηκώνομαι). ε) He came up und asked me the way. (Μὲ πλησίασε καὶ μὲ ρώτησε γιὰ τὸ δρόμο). στ) *I am up* in arms. (Εἶμαι ἀνόστατος). ζ) The whole country *was up*. (Ὅλη ἡ χώρα ξεσηκώθηκε). η) Prices *are up*. (Αἱ τιμὲς ἀνέρχονται). θ) *I tear up* a piece of paper. (Σχίζω ἓνα κομμάτι χαρτί σὲ μικρὰ κομμάτια). ι)

Time *is up*. (Ἡ ὥρα πέρασε). ια) We had mud right *up* to the knees. (Εἴχαμε λάσπη ἕως τὰ γόνατα). ιβ) This book *is not up* to much. (Αὐτὸ τὸ βιβλίον δὲν ἀξίζει μεγάλα πράγματα). ιγ) He was all right *up* to yesterday. (Ἔως χθὲς ἦταν πολὺ καλὰ). ιδ) *I am up* to date. (Εἶμαι ἐνήμερος). ιε) *I'm not up* to playing to-day. (Δὲν εἶμαι σε θέσι νὰ παίξω σήμερον). ιστ) *I come up* with someone. (Καταφθάνω κάποιον). ιζ) *It is* all *up* with him. (Πάει αὐτός. Κάηκε).

27. *within*. α) I decorate a house *within* and without. (Στολίζω ἕνα σπίτι μέσα κι' ἔξω). β) from *within*. (ἀπὸ μέσα). γ) I stay *within*. (Μένω μέσα).

28. *without*. α) clean *within* and *without*. (καθαρὸ μέσα κι' ἔξω). β) from *without*. (ἀπ' ἔξω).

DEGREES OF COMPARISON — ΒΑΘΜΟΙ ΣΥΓΚΡΙΣΕΩΣ

1. Τὰ πλεῖστα τῶν ἐπιρρημάτων τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης ἔχουν τρεῖς βαθμοὺς συγκρίσεως, ἥτοι: α) τὸν *θετικὸν* (positive), β) τὸν *συγκριτικὸν* (comparative), καὶ γ) τὸν *ὑπερθετικὸν* (superlative).

2. Ὁ *συγκριτικὸς* βαθμὸς τῶν μονοσυλλάβων ἐπιρρημάτων σχηματίζεται μετὰ τὴν προσθήκην στὸν *θετικὸν* βαθμὸ τῆς καταλήξεως *er*. Ὁ *ὑπερθετικὸς* βαθμὸς σχηματίζεται μετὰ τὴν προσθήκην στὸν *θετικὸν* τῆς καταλήξεως *est*.

Παραδείγματα:

Θετικὸς	Συγκριτικὸς	Ὑπερθετικὸς
near	nearer	nearest
fast	faster	fastest

early	earlier	earliest
often	oftener	oftenest
soon	sooner	soonest

3. Τὰ περισσότερα τῶν ἐπιρρημάτων τὰ ὅποια ἔχουν δύο καὶ ἄνω συλλαβὲς σχηματίζουν τὸν μὲν **συγκριτικὸν βαθμὸν** μὲ τὴν προσθήκην πρὸ τοῦ **θετικοῦ βαθμοῦ** τῆς λέξεως *more*, τὸν δὲ **ὑπερθετικὸν βαθμὸν** μὲ τὴν προσθήκην πρὸ τοῦ **θετικοῦ** τῆς λέξεως *most*.

Παραδείγματα.

Θετικὸς	Συγκριτικὸς	Ὑπερθετικὸς
quickly	more quickly	most quickly
brightly	more brightly	most brightly
bravely	more bravely	most bravely
wisely	more wisely	most wisely
direct }		
directly }	more directly	most directly
high }		
highly }	more highly	most highly
short }		
shortly }	more shortly	most shortly

4. Τὰ ἐπόμενα ἐπιρρήματα σχηματίζουν ἀνωμάλως τοὺς βαθμοὺς συγκρίσεως.

Θετικὸς	Συγκριτικὸς	Ὑπερθετικὸς
badly }		
ill }	worse	worst
far	{ farther	{ farthest
	{ further	{ furthest
little	less	least
much	more	most
well	better	best

5. Μερικὰ ἐπιρρήματα δὲν ἔχουν βαθμοὺς συγκρίσεως, ὅπως

π.χ. τὰ ἐπιρρήματα: *now, then, always, never, to-day, to-morrow, yesterday, sometimes, since. at, by, here, there, somewhere, throughout, besides, very, also, too, almost, quite, enough, again*, καὶ ἄλλα.

ΘΕΣΙΣ ΤΟΥ ΕΠΙΡΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ

1. Γενικῶς τὸ ἐπιρρήμα τίθεται πρὸ ἐπιθέτου, ἢ ἄλλου ἐπιρρήματος, ἢ παθητικῆς μετοχῆς.

Παράδειγματα

α) This is *entirely* new to me. (Αὐτὸ γιὰ μὲ εἶναι ἐντελῶς νέον).

β) His work is *carefully* done and *neatly* written. (Ἡ ἐργασία του ἔγινε προσεκτικὰ καὶ εἶναι καθαρὰ γραμμένη).

2. Κατ' ἀρχὴν, τροπικὰ ἐπιρρήματα καὶ κυρίως ὅσα τελειώνουν σὲ *ly*, ἀκολουθοῦν εὐθὺς μετὰ τὸ ρῆμα τῆς προτάσεως, ἐφ' ὅσον δὲν ὑπάρχει ἀντικείμενο. Ὅταν ὑπάρχει ἀντικείμενο τίθενται εὐθὺς μετὰ τοῦτο.

Παράδειγματα

α) He spoke *slowly* and *clearly*. (Μίλησε ἀργὰ καὶ καθαρά).

β) He has answered *correctly*. (Ἀπήντησεν ὀρθῶς).

γ) He shut the door *noisily*. (Ἐκλείσσε τὴ θύρα μὲ θόρυβο).

δ) He answered the question *correctly*. Ἀπήντησε στὴν ἐρώτησιν ὀρθῶς).

3. Συνήθως τὰ χρονικὰ ἐπιρρήματα τίθενται στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως.

Παράδειγματα

α) I went to Athens to see my friend *yesterday*. (Πῆγα χθὲς στὰς Ἀθήνας γιὰ νὰ ἰδῶ τὸν φίλο μου).

β) I hope I shall be able to come and see you all again *soon*. (Ἐλπίζω νὰ μπορέσω νὰ ἔλθω καὶ νὰ σᾶς ξαναἰδῶ ὅλους συντόμως).

“Όταν θέλουμεν νά δώσωμεν ἔμφασιν στήν ἔννοιαν τοῦ χρόνου τότε τοποθετοῦμε τὸ χρονικὸν ἐπίρρημα στήν ἀρχή τῆς προτάσεως, ὅπως π.χ.: *Yesterday it was a very nice day.* (Χθὲς ἦταν μιὰ πολὺ καλὴ ἡμέρα).

4. “Όταν σὲ μιὰ πρότασι ὑπάρχουν δυὸ ἐπιρρήματα, τοπικὸ καὶ χρονικὸ, προηγεῖται τὸ τοπικόν.

Παραδείγματα:

α) *I went there yesterday.* (Πῆγα ἐκεῖ χθὲς).

β) *He will come here tomorrow.* (Θὰ ἔλθῃ ἐδῶ αὔριο).

5. “Όταν σὲ μιὰ πρότασι ὑπάρχουν τρία ἐπιρρήματα, ἢτοι χρονικόν, τοπικόν καὶ τροπικόν ἢ σειρὰ των στήν πρότασι εἶναι ἡ ἑξῆς: α) τοπικόν, β) τροπικόν, γ) χρονικόν.

Παραδείγματα:

α) *He came here quickly yesterday.* (Χθὲς ἦλθε ἐδῶ γρήγορα).

β) *He stayed here very late last night.* (Χθὲς βράδυ ἔμεινε ἐδῶ πολὺ ἀργά).

6. Τὰ χρονικὰ ἐπιρρήματα *never, often, ever, always, sometimes, seldom, generally, usually* τίθενται πρὸ τοῦ κυρίου μέρους τοῦ ῥήματος.

Παραδείγματα:

α) *I never do that.* (Δὲν τὸ κάνω ποτέ).

β) *I have often seen him.* (Τὸν ἔχω ἰδῆ συχνά).

γ) *Have you ever met him?* (Τὸν ἔχετε συναντήσει ποτέ;)

δ) *I seldom see him.* (Σπανίως τὸν βλέπω).

ε) *Where do you usually spend the summer?* (Ποῦ περνᾷτε συνηθῶς τὸ καλοκαίρι;)

7) Μὲ τοὺς ἀπλοῦς χρόνους τοῦ ρήματος *to be* τὸ ἐπίρρημα τίθεται εὐθὺς μετὰ τὸ ρῆμα. Μὲ τοὺς συνθέτους χρόνους τοῦ αὐτοῦ ρήματος τὸ ἐπίρρημα τίθεται πρὸ τοῦ κυρίου μέρους τοῦ ρήματος.

Παραδείγματα.

α) He is *never* at home. (Δὲν εἶναι ποτὲ σπίτι).

β) He was *always* a quick worker. (Ἦτο πάντοτε ταχὺς ἐργάτης).

γ) They have *never* been here. (Δὲν ἔχουν ἔλθει ποτὲ ἐδῶ).

δ) She is *always* being ill. (Εἶναι πάντοτε ἄρρωστη).

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ Χ.

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΗΣ ΘΕΣΕΩΣ ΤΟΥ ΕΠΙΡΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ

*In the following sentences put the indicated adverb
in its proper position.*

(Τὸ ἐντὸς παρενθέσεως ἐπίρρημα τῶν ἐπομένων προτάσεων
νὰ τοποθετηθῇ εἰς τὴν πρέπουσαν θέσιν).

A. 1. Have you visited the Acropolis? (*ever*). 1. He has spoken to me about that. (*often*). 3. There are twenty students in the class (*nearly*). 4. Winter differs from summer (*greatly*). 5. It snows here (*seldom*). 6. He looks forty-five years old (*almost*). 7. What time do you get up? (*generally*). 8. I have some money in hand (*still*). 9. He is interested in facts (*only*). 10. Our team was beaten at football (*badly*). 11. He shuts the door with a bang (*always*). 12. Carry the eggs, please (*carefully*). 14. I didn't catch what you said (*quite*). 14. I could understand him (*hardly*).

B. 1. He fails to write to his mother (*never*). 2. He died with his work undone (*still*). 3. I understood so (*certainly*). 4. Where do you spend the summer (*usually*)? 5. There were a hundred people present (*scarcely*). 6. We got home last night (*late*). 7. They fought to save their country (*bravely*). 8. The church was situated on a sloping bank (*pleasantly*). 9. That man stated his opinion (*boldly*). 10. The field of battle told the history of the fight (*plainly*). 11. The two brothers have different tempera-

ments (*entirely*). 12. His words are impressed on my memory (*strongly*). 13. If you sleep between damp sheets, you will catch cold (*probably*). 14. I was that man's teacher, but now he is clever to teach me (*formerly-enough*). 15. If you look you will find the book you left on the grass (*carefully-certainly-accidentally*). 16. You know that you are not behaving, and that you will be punished for it (*properly-soon*). 17. They fell over themselves in their anxiety to get there quickly (*almost*). 18. He works in the early morning (*best*). 19. When the warm weather comes we put our winter clothes (*aside*). 20. The regiment was annihilated by the pestilence (*nearly*).

ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΝ ΕΒΔΟΜΟΝ

PREPOSITION — ΠΡΟΘΕΣΙΣ

A. *Preposition* (Πρόθεσις) εἶναι λέξις ἢ φράσις ἡ ὁποία δείχνει τὴν σχέσιν μιᾶς λέξεως ἢ φράσεως πρὸς ἄλλην λέξιν ἢ φράσιν. Ἡ σχέση αὐτὴ μπορεῖ νὰ εἶναι τροπικὴ, χρονικὴ, τοπικὴ, κλπ.

B. Κατ' ἀρχὴν ἡ πρόθεσις τίθεται πρὸ τῆς λέξεως ἢ φράσεως στὴν ὁποίαν ἀναφέρεται.

Παραδείγματα:

α) He had it *in his pocket*. (Τὸ εἶχε στὴν τσέπη του).

β) It was my friend *to whom* I lent my book. (Ἦταν ὁ φίλος μου στὸν ὁποῖον δάνεισα τὸ βιβλίο μου).

γ) I bet *on a horse*. (Στοιχηματίζω σ' ἓνα ἄλλογο).

δ) He ran *for fear of being late*. (Ἐτρεξε ἀπὸ φόβο μήπως ἀργήσῃ).

Γ. Σὲ ἐρωτηματικὰς προτάσεις, στὶς ὁποῖες ἡ πρόθεσις ἀναφέρεται σὲ ἐρωτηματικὴ ἀντωνυμία (*interrogative pronoun*) ἡ πρόθεσις τίθεται συνήθως, καὶ ἰδίως στὸν προφορικὸν λόγον, στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως καὶ ὅχι πρὸ τῆς ἐρωτηματικῆς ἀντωνυμίας).

Παραδείγματα:

α) *What* did you do it *for*? (Γιὰ ποῖο λόγο τὸ κάνατε αὐτό;)

β) *Where* did that parcel come *from*? (Ἀπὸ ποῦ ἦλθε αὐτὸ τὸ δέμα;)

γ) *What* are you talking *about*? (Γιὰ τί ὁμιλεῖτε;)

Δ. Σὲ προτάσεις στὶς ὁποῖες ἡ πρόθεσις ἀναφέρεται σὲ **ἀναφορικὴ ἄντωνυμία** (*relative pronoun*), ἡ πρόθεσις τίθεται συνήθως καὶ ἰδίως στὸν προφορικὸ λόγον, στὸ τέλος τῆς προτάσεως καὶ ὄχι πρὸ τῆς ἀναφορικῆς ἄντωνυμίας.

Παραδείγματα:

α) This is a habit *which* I have never been able to get out of. (Αὐτὴ εἶναι μιὰ συνήθεια ἀπὸ τὴν ὁποία δὲν κατώρθωσα ποτὲ ν' ἀπαλλαγῶ).

β) It was my brother *whom* I sent the telegram to. (*Ἦταν ὁ ἀδελφός μου πρὸς τὸν ὁποῖον ἔστειλα τὸ τηλεγράφημα).

γ) This is a habit *that* I have never been able to get out of.

Ε. Αἱ ἐπόμενες λέξεις τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης χρησιμοποιοῦνται ἀποκλειστικῶς καὶ μόνον ὡς προθέσεις.

1. *against*. α) He is *against* the government. (Εἶναι ἐναντίον τῆς Κυβερνήσεως).

β) He was married *against* his father's will. (Παντρεύτηκε παρὰ τὴν θέλησιν τοῦ πατρὸς του).

2. *amid* (*amidst*). Αἱ προθέσεις *amid* καὶ *amidst* ἀναφέρονται σὲ λέξεις ποὺ δὲν ἐκφράζουν ξεχωριστὰ πράγματα δυνάμενα νὰ μετρηθοῦν.

α) *Amid* the people's cheers the Prime Minister entered the city. (*὘ν μέσῳ ζητωκραυγῶν τοῦ λαοῦ ὁ Πρωθυπουργὸς εἰσῆλθεν εἰς τὴν πόλιν).

β) *Amid* the storm we lost our companions. (Μέσα στῇ θύελλα χάσαμε τοὺς συντρόφους μας).

3. *among* (*amongst*). Αἱ προθέσεις *among* καὶ *amongst* ἀναφέρονται σὲ λέξεις ποὺ ἐκφράζουν ξεχωριστὰ πράγματα δυνάμενα νὰ μετρηθοῦν.

α) I am *among* friends. (Εὐρίσκομαι μεταξὺ φίλων).

β) This is one example *among many*. (Αὐτὸ εἶναι ἓνα παρὰ-δειγμα μεταξὺ πολλῶν).

γ) I found a note *among your papers*. (Βρῆκα ἓνα σημειώ-μα μεταξὺ τῶν χαρτιῶν σας).

4. *at*. α) He lives *at Forden*. (Κατοικεῖ στὸ Forden). β. *at my brother's* (στὸ σπίτι τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ μου). γ) *at six o'clock*. (στὶς 6 ἡ ὥρα). δ) *at once* (πάραντα). ε) *at peace*. (ἐν εἰρήνῃ). στ) *at work* (στὴ δουλειά). ζ) My surprise *at finding him* there was great. (Ἡ ἐκπληξίς μου νὰ τὸν εὑρῶ ἐκεῖ ὑπῆρξε μεγάλη). η) He dit it *at my request*. (Τὸ ἔκανε τῇ αἰτήσῃ μου).

5. *beside* α) He was sitting *beside me*. (Ἐκάθητο δίπλα μου). β) He looks a giant *beside me*. (Φαίνεται γίγας δίπλα μου). γ) I am *beside myself* with joy. (Εἶμαι τρελλὸς ἀπὸ χαρὰ).

6. *during*. α) *during my absence*. (κατὰ τὴν διάρκεια τῆς ἀπουσίας μου). β) The moon gives us light *during the night*. (Τὸ φεγγάρι μᾶς δίδει φῶς κατὰ τὴν νύκτα).

7). *from*. α) He went *from here* at 7. (Ἀνεχώρησε ἀπ' ἐδῶ στὶς 7). β) 30 kilometres *from Athens*. (30 χιλιόμετρα ἀπὸ τὰς Ἀθή-νας). γ) apart *from all other motives*. (ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ ὅλους τοὺς ἄλλους λόγους). δ) I prevent someone *from falling*. (Προλαμβάνω κάποιον ἀπὸ τοῦ νὰ πέσῃ). ε) I take something *from someone*. (Παίρνω κάτι ἀπὸ κάποιον). στ) I cannot tell him *from his brother*. (Δὲν μπορῶ νὰ τὸν ξεχωρίσω ἀπὸ τὸν ἀδελφό του). ζ) He has heard it *from my friend*. (Τὸ ἤκουσε ἀπὸ τὸν φίλο μου). η) I die *from fatigue*. (Πεθαίνω ἀπὸ κόπωση). θ) I draw *from nature*. (Σχεδιάζω ἐκ τοῦ φυσικοῦ). ι) *from above* (ἐκ τῶν ἄνω).

8. *into*. α) I come *into a building*. (Μπαίνω σ' ἓνα οἶκημα). β) I get *into trouble*. (Μπλέκομαι σὲ φασαρία). γ) I look *into a matter*. (Ἐξετάζω μιὰ ὑπόθεσι). δ) They voted him *into the chair*. (Τὸν ἐξελέξαν πρόεδρο). ε) I come *into an inheritance*.

(Κληρονομῶ κάτι). στ) I turn lead *into gold*. (Μετατρέπω μόλυβδο σὲ χρυσό). ζ) I divide a cake *into four equal parts*. (Μοιράζω ἓνα κέικ σὲ 4 ἴσα μέρη). η) I translate French *into Greek*. (Μεταφράζω Γαλλικὰ σὲ Ἑλληνικά). θ) I burst *into tears*. (Ξεσπῶ σὲ δάκρυα).

9) of. α) a glass of wine (ἓνα ποτήρι κρασί). β) the rays of the sun. (Αἱ ἀκτῖνες τοῦ ἡλίου). γ) I bought it of an old man. (Τὸ ἀγόρασα ἀπὸ ἑνα γέρο). δ) I ask something of someone. (Ζητῶ κάτι ἀπὸ κάποιον). ε) He died of his wound. (Πέθανε ἀπὸ τὸ τραῦμα του). στ) What has become of her? (Τὶ ἀπέγινε αὐτή;) ζ) It is nice of you. (Εἶναι εὐγενικὸ ἐκ μέρους σας). η) a friend of mine (ἓνας ἀπὸ τοὺς φίλους μου).

10. toward (towards). α) He was running towards us (Ἔτρεχε πρὸς ἡμᾶς). β) towards the end of the week. (πρὸς τὸ τέλος τῆς ἑβδομάδος). γ) How do you feel towards him? (Ποιὰ εἶναι τὰ αἰσθήματά σας πρὸς αὐτόν;)

11. with. α) He was talking with me. (Μιλοῦσε μαζί μου). β) I rise with the sun. (Σηκώνομαι μετὰ τὸν ἥλιο). γ) I take milk with tea. (Παίρνω γάλα μετὰ τσάι). δ) with a stick in my hand (μὲ ἓνα μπαστιῦνι στὸ χέρι μου). ε) with your leave. (μετὰ τὴν ἀδειάν σας. στ) He fought with courage. (Πολέμησε μετὰ θάρρους). ζ) He is down with the flu. (Εἶναι κρεββατωμένος ἀπὸ γρίπη).

ΣΤ. Αἱ ἐπόμενες λέξεις χρησιμοποιοῦνται ὡς προθέσεις καὶ ὡς *Present Participles* ρημάτων. Τῶν λέξεων αὐτῶν δίδομεν παραδείγματα χρησιμοποιεσέως των ὡς προθέσεων.

1. concerning. (Πρόθεσις καὶ Present Participle τοῦ ρήματος *to concern*).

α) Tell me your opinion concerning this matter. (Εἰπέτε μου τὴν γνώμη σας σχετικῶς μὲ αὐτὸ τὸ θέμα). β) I have nothing to say concerning his behaviour. (Δὲν ἔχω νὰ εἰπῶ τίποτε σχετικῶς μετὰ τὴ διαγωγή του).

2. *excepting*. They were all killed *excepting five*. (ἐφονεύθησαν ὅλοι ἐκτὸς πέντε).

3. *regarding*. Χρησιμοποιεῖται μὲ τὴν αὐτὴν ἔννοια τοῦ *concerning*.

4. *respecting*. Χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης μὲ τὴν αὐτὴν ἔννοια τοῦ *concerning*.

Z. Μερικὲς λέξεις χρησιμοποιοῦνται ὡς **προθέσεις** καὶ ὡς ἄλλα μέρη τοῦ λόγου, ἐκτὸς ὡς **ἐπιρρήματα**, ὅπως αἱ κατωτέρω λέξεις. Τῶν λέξεων τούτων δίδομεν παραδείγματα χρησιμοποιήσεως των ὡς **προθέσεων**.

1. *despite*. Χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς **πρόθεσις** καὶ ὡς **οὐσιαστικό**. Ἔχει τὴν αὐτὴν ἔννοια μὲ τὴ φράσι *«in spite of»* ἢ ὁποία χρησιμοποιεῖται ἐπίσης ὡς πρόθεσις.

α) *despite his promises*.—*in spite of his promises*. (παρὰ τὶς ὑποσχέσεις του). β) *despite it all*.—*in spite of it all*. (παρ' ὅλα αὐτά).

2. *except*. Χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς **πρόθεσις** καὶ ὡς **ῥῆμα**. α) I am never at home *except on Sundays*. (Δὲν εἶμαι ποτὲ σπίτι ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὶς Κυριακὰς). β) They are all sick at home *except me*. (Εἶναι ὅλοι ἄρρωστοι σπίτι ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ μένα).

3. *for*. Χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς **πρόθεσις** καὶ ὡς **σύνδεσμος** (conjunction).

α) I did it *for you*. (Τὸ ἔκανα γιὰ σᾶς). β) *for want of* money (λόγῳ ἐλλείψεως χρημάτων). γ) He does it *for pleasure*, not *for money*. (Τὸ κάνει γιὰ εὐχαρίστησι, ὄχι γιὰ χρῆμα). δ) I bought it *for a pound*. (Τὸ ἀγόρασα γιὰ μιὰ λίρα). ε) I mistook him *for his brother*. (Τὸν πῆρα γιὰ τὸν ἀδελφόν του). στ) I take something *for granted*. (Παίρνω κάτι ὡς δεδομένον). ζ) He is given up *for lost*. (Θεωρεῖται ὡς ἀπωλεσθεὶς). η) He is very tall *for his age*. (Εἶναι πολὺ ψηλὸς γιὰ τὴν ἡλικίαν του). θ) It is time

for us to go. (Εἶναι καιρὸς νὰ πᾶμε). ι) He left *for Germany*. (*Ανεχώρησε γιὰ τὴ Γερμανία). ια) I wait *for someone*. (Περιμένω κάποιον). ιβ) I send *for a doctor*. (Εἰδοποιῶ ἕνα γιατρό). ιγ) He left last night *for a week*. (*Ανεχώρησε χθὲς βράδυ γιὰ μιὰ ἑβδομάδα). ιδ) He has been ill *for a month*. (Εἶναι ἄρρωστος ἀπὸ μηνός). ιε) We could see *for miles* around. (Μπορούσαμε νὰ ἰδοῦμε μίλλια γύρω μας).

4. *till*. Χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς **πρόθεσις** (preposition), ὡς **ῥήμα** (verb), καὶ ὡς **Σύνδεσμος** (conjunction).

α) I shall wait for you *till six o'clock*. (Θὰ σᾶς περιμένω ἕως τῆς 6). β) from morning *till night* (ἀπὸ τὸ πρωῒ ἕως τὸ βράδυ). γ) I shall not be back *till six*. (Δὲν θὰ ἐπιστρέψω ἕως τῆς 6).

5. *until*. Χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς **πρόθεσις** (preposition), καὶ ὡς **σύνδεσμος** (conjunction).

α) Wait *until to-morrow* (Περιμένετε ἕως αὔριο). β) It won't be ready *until next week*. (Δὲν θὰ εἶναι ἑτοιμο ἕως τὴν ἄλλη ἑβδομάδα). γ) The holiday lasts *until September*. (Αἱ διακοπὲς διαρκοῦν μέχρι Σεπτεμβρίου).

Η. Μερικὲς προθέσεις εἶναι σύνθετες ἀποτελούμενες ἀπὸ λέξεις αἱ ὁποῖες ἀνήκουν σὲ ἄλλα μέρη τοῦ λόγου (σύνδεσμος, ἐπίρρημα, κλπ.) καὶ ἀπὸ τὴν πρόθεσιν *of* ἢ *to*.

Αἱ κυριώτερες ἐξ αὐτῶν εἶναι αἱ ἑξῆς.

1. *Because of*. (Σύνδεσμος καὶ πρόθεσις *of*).

α) *Because of your disobedience* you will be punished. (Λόγῳ τῆς ἀπειθείας σας θὰ τιμωρηθῆτε).

β) *Because of his great age* he couldn't walk so fast as the others. (Λόγῳ τῆς μεγάλης του ἡλικίας δὲν μπορούσε νὰ περπατήσει τόσο γρήγορα, ὅσον οἱ ἄλλοι).

2. *instead of*. (ἐπίρρημα καὶ πρόθεσις *of*).

α) He will go *instead of me*. (Θὰ πάη ἀντὶ γιὰ μέ). β)

May I get another book *instead of it*? (Μπορῶ νὰ ἔχω ἄλλο βιβλίο ἀντὶ αὐτοῦ;)

3. *out of*. (ἐπίρρημα καὶ πρόθεσις *of*).

α) I act *out of fear*. (Ἐνεργῶ ἀπὸ φόβο). β) I do something *out of pity*. (Κάνω κάτι ἀπὸ οἶκτο). γ) *out of hand*. (ἐκτὸς ἐλέγχου). δ) *out of control*. (ἐκτὸς ἐλέγχου).

4. *owing to* (μετοχή καὶ πρόθεσις *to*).

α) There was much delay *owing to the floods*. (Ὑπῆρξε.) μεγάλη καθυστέρησις λόγῳ πλημμύρας). β) *Owing to the rain*, we could not come. (Λόγῳ τῆς βροχῆς δὲν μπορέσαμε νὰ ἔλθωμεν

Θ. Πολλὲς λέξεις τῆς Ἀγγλικῆς χρησιμοποιοῦνται, καθὼς εἶδαμε στὸ κεφάλαιον περὶ Ἐπιρρήματος, ἄλλοτε ὡς ἐπιρρήματα (Adverbs) καὶ ἄλλοτε ὡς προθέσεις (prepositions). Στὸ κεφάλαιο περὶ ἐπιρρήματος δώσαμε ἐπίσης τὶς λέξεις αὐτὲς μὲ παραδείγματα χρησιμοποίησέως τῶν ὡς ἐπιρρημάτων. Τῶν αὐτῶν λέξεων δίδομεν κατωτέρω παραδείγματα χρησιμοποίησέως τῶν ὡς προθέσεων.

1. *about*. α) I ask someone *about something*. (Ἐρωτῶ κάποιον γιὰ κάτι). β) He does not care much *about wealth*. (Δὲν δίδει μεγάλη σημασία στὸν πλοῦτο). γ) I never carry much money *about me*. (Δὲν φέρω ποτὲ μαζί μου πολλὰ χρήματα). δ) Go *about your business*. (Κυττᾶτε τὴ δουλειά σας). ε) I have knocked *about the world* a good deal. (Εἶμαι ἀρκετὰ κοσμογυρισμένος). στ) I will see him *about six o'clock*. (Θὰ τὸν ἰδῶ περὶ-που στὶς 6). ζ) I was tired of walking *about the streets*. (Εἶχα βαρεθῇ νὰ τρυγυρνῶ στοὺς δρόμους).

2. *above*. α) a man *above suspicion*. (ἄνθρωπος ἀνώτερος ὑποψίας). β) I keep my head *above water*. Κυριοῦ: (Κρατῶ τὸ κεφάλι μου ἔξω ἀπὸ τὸ νερό). Μεταφορ: (Βρίσκομαι ἐκτὸς κινδύνου. — χωρὶς χρέη). γ) The population of this town is *above a million*. (Ὁ πληθυσμὸς αὐτῆς τῆς πόλεως ὑπερβαίνει τὸ ἓνα ἑκατομύριο. δ) *above all*. (ὑπεράνω ὅλων, πρὸ παντός). ε) Something

is *above* someone's comprehension. (Κάτι ὑπερβαίνει τὴν ἀντίληψιν τινος). στ) I get *above myself*. (Τὸ παίρνω ἐπάνω μου) ζ) I live *above my means*. (Ὡς ὑπὲρ τὰς δυνάμεις μου.—Ξοδεύω περισσότερο ἀπὸ ὅσα κερδίζω).

3. *across*. α) a bridge *across a river*. (μιά γέφυρα ἐπάνω ἀπὸ ἕνα ποτάμι). β) a forest *across a river*. (ἕνα δάσος στὴν ἀπέναντι ὄχθη ἐνὸς ποταμοῦ). γ) I see someone walking *across a street*. (Βλέπω κάποιον νὰ διασχίζει ἕνα δρόμο).

4. *after*. α) I ask *after* someone's health. (Ζητῶ πληροφορίας γιὰ τὴν ὑγεία τινός). β) I tried for an hour and failed *after all*. (Προσπάθησα ἐπὶ μίαν ὥρα καὶ μ' ὅλον τοῦτο ἀπέτυχα). γ) *After all*, what does it matter? (Στὸ κάτω—κάτω, τί πειράζει;). δ) I am *after something*. (Ἐπιδιώκω—γυρεύω—κάτι). ε) I come *after someone*. (Διαδέχομαι κάποιον). στ) I long *after something*. (Λαχταρῶ κάτι). ζ) I look *after someone (something)*. (Περιοποιῦμαι κάποιον—κάτι). η) I take *after someone*. (Μοιάζω κάποιον). ι) *after a manner*. (κατὰ κάποιον τρόπο).

5. *along*. α) I am walking *along a road*. (Περπατῶ κατὰ μῆκος ἐνὸς δρόμου). β) *along here*. (πρὸς αὐτὴν ἐδῶ τὴν κατεύθυνσιν). γ) *along there*. (πρὸς αὐτὴν ἐκεῖ τὴν κατεύθυνσιν). δ) I am walking *along the left bank* of a river. (Περπατῶ κατὰ μῆκος τῆς ἀριστερᾶς ὁχθῆς ἐνὸς ποταμοῦ).

6. *before*. α) I shall come *before 10 o'clock*. (Θὰ ἔλθω πρὶν ἀπὸ τῆς 10). β) I appear *before someone*. (Ἐμφανίζομαι πρὸ τινος). γ) I come *before someone*. (Προηγῶμαι—σὲ βαθμὸν, θέσι—ἀπὸ κάποιον). δ) I get *before someone* in something. (Ξεπερνῶ κάποιον σὲ κάτι). ε) I sail *before the wind*. (Πλέω μὲ οὐρίον ἄνεμο).

7. *behind*. α) *behind the door (hill, house)*. (Πίσω ἀπὸ τὴν πόρτα (τὸ λόφο, τὸ σπίτι). β) I have someone *behind me*. (Κάποιος εἶναι πίσω μου.—Μεταφ: Κάποιος μὲ βοηθεῖ—μὲ ὑποστηρίζει).

γ) *behind someone's back*. (ἐν ἀγνοίᾳ τινός). δ) *behind time* (ἀργά). ε) *behind the times* (ἀπηρεχαιωμένος, ντεμοντέ).

8. *below*. α) *below the horizon*. (κάτω ἀπὸ τὸν ὁρίζοντα). β) The temperature is *below* 0°C. (Ἡ θερμοκρασία εἶναι κάτω τοῦ 0° Κελσίου). γ) Your composition is *below average*. (Ἡ ἔκθεσίς σας εἶναι κάτω τοῦ μέσου ὅρου).

9. *besides*. α) and many more *besides them*. (καὶ πολλοὶ ἀκόμη ἐκτὸς ἀπ' αὐτοὺς). β) He is very good at games *besides being a scholar*. (Εἶναι πολὺ καλὸς παίκτης κι' ἐπὶ πλέον καλὸς σπουδαστής). γ) I sent him a gift *besides my original* monthly sum. (Τοῦ ἔστειλα ἓνα δῶρο ἐκτὸς ἀπὸ τὸ τακτικὸ μηνιατικόν).

10) *between*. α) A treaty was concluded *between the two nations*. (Μία συνθήκη συνήφθη μεταξὺ τῶν δύο ἐθνῶν). β) *between Athens and Larissa*. (μεταξὺ Ἀθηνῶν καὶ Λαρίσης). γ) *between two fires*. (μεταξὺ δύο πυρῶν). δ) There is many a slip *between the cup and the lip*. (Μεταξὺ χειλέων καὶ κύλικος πολλὰ πέλει).

11. *by*. α) I sit *by someone*. (Κάθομαι δίπλα σὲ κάποιον). β) We came *by the same road*. (Ἔλθσαμε ἀπὸ τὸν ἴδιον δρόμον). γ) *by land-by sea*. (κατὰ ξηρὰν—κατὰ θάλασσαν). δ) I take something *by force*. (Παίρνω κάτι διὰ τῆς βίας). ε) He has two sons *by his first wife*. (Ἔχει δύο γιουὺς ἀπὸ τὴν πρώτην του γυναῖκα). στ) I am Greek *by birth*. (Εἶμαι Ἑλλήν ἐκ γεννητῆς). ζ) *by your leave*. (μὲ τὴν ἀδειάν σας). η) one *by one—little by little* (ἓνας, ἓνας—λίγο, λίγο). θ) I sell (buy) *by the dozen*. (Πωλῶ—ἀγοράζω—μὲ τὴ δωδεκάδα). ι) *by the end* of the month. (Ἔως τὸ τέλος τοῦ μηνός). ια) I do something *by myself*. (Κάνω κάτι μόνος μου).

12. *down*. α) I walk *down a hill*. (Κατεβαίνω ἓνα λόφον). β) A ship sails *down the river*. (Ἐνα πλοῖο κατεβαίνει τὸ ποτάμι—πλέει πρὸς τὰς ἐκβολάς). γ) with her hair hanging *down her back*. (μὲ τὰ μαλλιά της πίπτοντα στὴ ράχη της).

13. *in*. α) He had it *in his pocket*. (Τὸ εἶχε στὴν τσέπη του). β) I engage *in politics*. (Ἀνακατεύομαι στὴν πολιτική). γ) *in honour of someone* (πρὸς τιμὴν τινός). δ) I live *in Athens*. (Ζῶ στὰς Ἀθήνας). ε) the man *in the street*. (Ὁ λαουτζίκος). στ) sound *in body and mind*. (Ὑγιὴς στὸ σῶμα καὶ στὸ μυαλό). ζ) a lady *in black*. (μιὰ κυρία στὰ μαῦρα). η) *in five minutes*. (σὲ πέντε λεπτά). θ) I waited three hours *in the rain*. (Περίμενα τρεῖς ὥρες στὴ βροχὴ). ι) one *in a thousand*. (ἓνας στοὺς χιλίους).

14. *inside*. α) Don't let him come *inside the house*. (Μὴ τὸν ἐπιτρέψῃς νὰ μῇ στὸ σπίτι). β) *Inside this box* there are many books. (Μέσα σ' αὐτὸ τὸ κουτὶ ὑπάρχουν πολλὰ βιβλία).

15. *off*. α) He fell *off a ladder*. (Ἐπεσε ἀπὸ μιὰ ἀνεμόσκαλα). β) I am *off my head*. (Δὲν εἶμαι στὰ καλά μου). γ) I am *off duty*. (Εἶμαι ἐκτὸς ὑπηρεσίας).

16. *on*. α) Put it *on the chair*. (Βάλτε το στὸ τραπέζι). β) I have it *on me*. (Τὸ ἔχω ἐπάνω μου). γ) I bet *on a horse*. (Στοιχηματίζω σ' ἓνα ἄλογο). δ) *on the right—on the left*. (δεξιὰ—ἀριστερά). ε) I was hit *on the head*. (Χτύπησα στὸ κεφάλι). στ) I live *on bread and water*. (Ζῶ μὲ ψωμὶ καὶ νερό). ζ) I met him *on Sunday*. (Τὸν συνήντησα τὴν Κυριακὴν). η) *on the same day* and at the same hour. (Τὴν αὐτὴν ἡμέρα καὶ ὥρα). θ) my opinion *on a subject*. (ἡ γνώμη μου ἐπὶ ἐνὸς θέματος).

17. *out*. Μόνη τῆς ἡ λέξις *out* χρησιμοποιεῖται ὡς ἐπίρρημα ὡς ἐλέχθη στὸ κεφάλαιο περὶ ἐπιρρήματος. Ὡς πρόθεσις χρησιμοποιεῖται μαζί μὲ τὴν πρόθεσιν *of*, ἥτοι *out of*. Σχετικὰ παραδείγματα ἐδόθησαν ἤδη (Η)β).

18. *outside*. α) *outside the town*. (ἐκτὸς τῆς πόλεως). β) It is *outside my sphere* of influence. (Εἶναι ἐκτὸς τῆς σφαίρας ἐπιρροῆς μου). γ) She is standing just *outside the door*. (Στέκεται ἀκριβῶς ἔξω ἀπὸ τὴν πόρτα).

19. *over*. α) a cloud of smoke *over the town*. (ἓνα σύννεφο

καπνοῦ ἐπάνω ἀπὸ τὴν πόλιν). β) I laugh *over a story*. (Γελῶ μὲ μιὰ ἱστορίαν). γ) He reigned *over an immense empire*. (Ἐβασίλευσεν ἐπὶ ἀπεράντου αὐτοκρατορίας). δ) He has travelled all *over Europe*. (Ταξείδευσε σὲ ὅλη τὴν Εὐρώπην). ε) the house *over the road*. (Τὸ ἀπέναντι σπίτι—ποὺ βρίσκεται στὴν ἀπέναντι πλευρὰ τοῦ δρόμου). στ) He won't live *over the night*. (Δὲν θὰ βγάλῃ τὴ νύχτα—Δὲν θὰ ζήσῃ ἕως τὸ πρωῒ). ζ) He is *over sixty*. (Εἶναι περισσότερον ἀπὸ 60 χρονῶν—πέρασε τὰ 60). η) I am *over head and ears* in debt. (Εἶμαι πνιγμένος στὰ χρέη).

20. *past*. α) half *past six*. (6 καὶ μισή). β) She is *past shame*. (Ἐχασε κάθε ντροπὴ). γ) The pain was almost *past bearing*. (Ὁ πόνος ἦταν σχεδὸν ἀνυπόφορος).

21. *since*. α) I have been here *since this morning*. (Εἶμαι ἔδῳ ἀπὸ τὸ πρωῒ). β) *since last year*. (ἀπὸ πέρσι). γ) *since his last letter*. (ἀπὸ τὸ τελευταῖο του γράμμα).

22. *through*. α) I walk *through a wood*. (Διασχίζω ἕνα δάσος—Περπατῶ σ' ἕνα δάσος). β) I look *through the window*. (Παρατηρῶ διὰ μέσου τοῦ παραθύρου). γ) I get *through an examination*. (Περνῶ ἐπιτυχῶς ἑξετάσεις). δ) *Through whom* did you learn that? (Ἀπὸ ποιὸν τὸ μάθατε;) ε) It was *through you* we lost the match. (Ἐξ αἰτίας σας χάσαμε τὸ μάτς).

23. *throughout*. α) *throughout* the whole country (σὲ ὅλη τὴ χώρα). (Συνὼν τοῦ: *all over the country*). β) *throughout my life*. (καθ' ὅλη μου τὴν ζωή).

24. *to* α) I go *to church*. (Πηγαίνω στὴν ἐκκλησίαν). β) I go *to bed*. (Πηγαίνω στὸ κρεβάτι—πηγαίνω νὰ κοιμηθῶ). γ) We heard it *to the end*. (Τὸ ἀκούσαμε ἕως τὸ τέλος). δ) They all agreed *to a man*. (Συμφώνησαν ὅλοι ἀνεξαιρέτως). ε) here's *to you*. (στὴν ὑγείαν σας). στ) *To my surprise* he won the game. (Πρὸς μεγάλην μου ἔκ πληξιν κέρδισε τὸ παιγνίδι). ζ) as *to your brother*. (ὅσο φροῶ τὸν ἀδελφόν σας). η) clothes made *to order*. (ἐνδύματα καμω-

μένα ἐπὶ μέτρῳ). θ) What he has done is nothing *to what* he means to do. ("Ο,τι ἔκανε εἶναι τίποτε συγκρινόμενον μὲ ὅ,τι προτίθεται νὰ κάνῃ). ι) in the ratio of two *to three*. (εἰς ἀναλογίαν δύο πρὸς τρεῖς).

25. *under*. α) *under a tree*. (κάτω ἀπὸ ἓνα δένδρον). β) *under eighteen years of age*. (ἡλικίας κάτω τῶν 18 ἐτῶν). γ) I am *under someone's orders*. (Εἶμαι ὑπὸ τὰς διαταγὰς τινος). δ) *under the fire* of several batteries. ("Υπὸ τὸ πῦρ πολλῶν πυροβολαρχιῶν). ε) He is *under sentence* of death. ("Εχει καταδικασθῇ σὲ θάνατο). στ) The car is *under repair*. (Τὸ αὐτοκίνητον εἶναι ὑπὸ ἐπισκευῆν). ζ) the matter *under discussion*. (τὸ ὑπὸ συζήτησιν θέμα). η) I was *under the impression* that... ("Ημουν ὑπὸ τὴν ἐντύπωσιν ὅτι...) θ) *under arms* (ὑπὸ τὰ ὅπλα).

26) *up*. α) I climb *up a precipice*. ("Αναρριχῶμαι ἓνα ἀπότομο βράχο.) β) I sail *up the river*. (Πλέω πρὸς τὴν πηγὴν τοῦ ποταμοῦ). γ) We saw a monkey *up a tree*. (Εἶδαμε μιὰ μαϊμού ἐπάνω σ' ἓνα δένδρον).

27. *within*. α) *within these walls*. (μέσα σ' αὐτοὺς τοὺς τοίχους). β) *within sight*. (ἐντὸς ὁρατῆς ὁράσεως). γ) I will do it *within two days*. (Θὰ τὸ κάνω ἐντὸς δύο ἡμερῶν). δ) I tell a length *within an inch*. (Λέγω ἓνα μῆκος κατὰ προσέγγισιν μιᾶς ἴντσας).

28. *without*. α) There is no rose *without a thorn*. (Δὲν ὑπάρχει τριαντάφυλλο χωρὶς ἀγκάθι). β) He went *without an umbrella* ("Εφυγε χωρὶς ὀμπρέλλα). γ) I do something *without difficulty*. (Κάνω κάτι χωρὶς δυσκολία).

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ XIII

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΩΝ ΠΡΟΘΕΣΕΩΝ

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions.

(Τὰ κενὰ τῶν προτάσεων νά συμπληρωθοῦν μὲ τίς
ὀρθῆς προθέσεις)

A. 1. He has no respect... his promises. 2. I don't know the name... this boy. 3. My girl is playing... her dolls. 4. My son and his friends are playing football... the field. 5. The boy carved his name... a tree. 6. This medicine acts... the heart. 7. He looked... me... an angry glare. 8. His faith... God helped him... his misfortune. 9. The plan has been approved... the commission. 10. Please, call me... six o'clock to-morrow morning. 11. The doctor is not... home. 12. I am dying... curiosity. 13. We landed... Piraeus. 14. We were anxious... the fate of the missing airman. 15. The law is still... effect.

B. 1. I am very much interested... your plans. 2. This is an exception... a grammatical rule. 3. I will speak... him... the matter. 4. When did Italy declare war... Greece? 5. Have you insured your house... fire? 6. I don't take an interest... politics. 7. The soldiers were standing... a line. 8. He pays too much attention... forms. 9. a) He keeps nothing... me.—b) Please keep this seat... me.—c) In England traffic keeps... the left. 10. There is a ring... the door. 11. Two cows were lying... the green grass. 12. Can you see a large house... the river? 13. When my friend came in we were sitting... the table. 14. Don't

lean. . the fence. It may fall... your weight. 15. The struggle... life is very severe... some parts of the world.

1. I. have very little trust... this man. 2. The beauty of these gardens owes more... art than... nature. 3. a) He fell... the bottom of the well. β) There were some tealeaves... the bottom... the cup. 4 I raised my hat... him and he bowed... return. 5. He became rich but only .. the cost... his health. 6. In the course... the discussion, it became clear that he was opposed... the plan. 7. Let us sit... a while... that big tree... the roadside. 8. He was brought face... face... the enemy. 9. α) The moon goes... the earth. β) The aeroplane fell... the earth. γ) He is the greatest man... earth. 10. α) I fell... a chair... the dark room. β) All expenses fell... me. γ) He fell in... my views... once. 11. There's an element... truth... his account... what happened. 12. Mothers are sometimes blind... the faults... their children. 13. I have been... correspondence... him... the matter. 14. α) They walked away hand... hand. β) We have some good news... hand. γ) My socks are knitted... hand 15. α) If you look...the glass, you can see yourself. β) We can see... glass.

ΚΕΦΑΛΑΙΟΝ ΟΓΔΩΘ

I. CONJUNCTION — ΣΥΝΔΕΣΜΟΣ

A. Σύνδεσμος (Conjunction) εἶναι λέξεις ἢ φράσεις, ἡ ὁποία συνδέει μεταξύ των λέξεις, φράσεις ἢ προτάσεις. Αἱ λέξεις π.χ. *and, although, but*, κλπ., καθὼς ἐπίσης αἱ φράσεις *in order that, so as to, not only... but* εἶναι σύνδεσμοι.

B. Μερικὲς λέξεις τῆς ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης χρησιμοποιοῦνται ἀποκλειστικῶς καὶ μόνον ὡς **σύνδεσμοι**. Δίδομεν κατωτέρω τὶς κυριώτερες ἐξ αὐτῶν μὲ ἀντίστοιχα παραδείγματα.

1. *although*.—*Although* it was cold, we didn't light a fire.
(Ἐν καὶ ἔκανε κρύο, δὲν ἀνάψαμε φωτιά).

2. *and*.—He took his hat *and* coat. (Πῆρε τὸ καπέλλο καὶ τὸ ἑλανωφόρι του).

3. *because*.—He could not come *because* he was ill. (Δὲν μπόρεσε νὰ ἔλθῃ γιὰτὶ ἦταν ἄρρωστος).

ΣΗΜ. Ἡ φράσις *because of* χρησιμοποιεῖται, καθὼς εἶδμεν, ὡς **πρόθεσις**.

4. *if*.—He could do it *if* you asked him. (Θὰ μπόρουσε νὰ τὸ κάνῃ, ἂν τὸ ζητούσατε).

5. *lest*.—Do not say it, *lest* you should repent having spoken. (Μὴ τὸ λέτε, μήπως τυχὸν μετανιώσετε γιὰτὶ τὸ εἵπατε).

6. *nor*.—I can't do it; *nor* can anybody else. (Δὲν μπορῶ νὰ τὸ κάνω, οὔτε κανεὶς ἄλλος).

7. *or*. Open the door *or* shut it. ("Ἀνοιξε τὴν πόρτα ἢ κλείψε τὴν).

8. *than*.—He will arrive today or tomorrow. (Θὰ φθάσῃ σήμερον ἢ αὔριο).

9. *unless*.—He will come, *unless* he is ill. (Θὰ ἔλθῃ, ἐκτὸς ἂν εἶναι ἄρρωστος).

10. *whether*.—Tell me *whether* it is true. (Εἰπέτε μου ἂν αὐτὸ εἶναι ἀλήθεια).

11. *whereas*.—Some people like fat food *whereas* others hate it. (Μερικοὶ ἀγαποῦν λιπαρὰ φαγητά, ἐνῶ ἄλλοι τὰ μισοῦν).

Γ. Μερικὲς λέξεις χρησιμοποιοῦνται ὡς **σύνδεσμοι** (Conjunction) καὶ ὡς ἄλλα μέρη τοῦ λόγου. Δίδομεν κατωτέρω τὶς κυριώτερας ἐξ αὐτῶν μὲ παραδείγματα χρησιμοποιοῦσέως των ὡς **συνδέσμων**.

1. *after*. (σύνδ.—πρόθ.—ἐπίρ.) *After* her husband died, she had to earn her own living. ('Αφοῦ πέθανε ὁ ἄνδρας τῆς ἦταν ἀναγκασμένη νὰ κερδίσῃ τὴ ζωὴ τῆς).

2. *as*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ. συγκρ.) I thought of it *as* he came in. (Τὸ σκέφτηκα τὴ στιγμὴ ποὺ μπῆκε).

3. *before*. (σύνδ.—πρόθ.— ἐπίρ.)—We must do it *before* he comes. (Πρέπει νὰ τὸ κάνωμε προτοῦ ἔλθῃ).

4. *but*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.—πρόθ.) He worked hard *but* he failed. (Δούλεψε σκληρά, ἀλλ' ἀπέτυχε).

5. *for*. (σύνδ.—πρόθ.) We decided to stay *for* the weather was vile. ('Αποφασίσσαμε νὰ μείνωμε διότι ὁ καιρὸς ἦτο ἄσχημος).

6. *neither*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.—ἐπίθ.—άντων.). He could not swim across, *neither* could I. (Δὲν μπορούσε νὰ περάσῃ κολυμπώντας, οὔτε ἐγώ).

7. *nevertheless*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.). There was no news; *nevertheless* she went on hoping. (Δὲν ὑπῆρχαν νέα, ἐν τούτοις ἐξακολουθοῦσε νὰ ἐλπίζῃ).

8. *only*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.—ἐπίθ.). I would help you with pleasure, *only* I am too busy. (Θὰ σὰς βοηθοῦσα εὐχαρίστως, μόνον ποὺ εἶμαι πολὺ ἀπασχολημένος).

9. *since*. (σύνδ.—πρόθ.—ἐπίρ.). What have you been doing *since* I last saw you? (Τὶ κάνετε ἀφ' ὅτου τελευταίως σὰς εἶδα;)

10. *so*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.). It was late, so, we went home. (Ἦταν ἀργά, ἔτσι πήγαμε σπίτι).

11. *that*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίθ.—άντων.). There is no doubt *that* he will come. (Δὲν ὑπάρχει ἀμφιβολία πὼς θὰ ἔλθῃ).

12. *then*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.). Is it raining? *then* we had better stay at home. (Βρέχει; τότε καλὰ θὰ κάναμε νὰ μείνωμε σπίτι).

13. *till*. (σύνδ.—πρόθ.—ρῆμα). I shall read it *till* you return. (Θὰ τὸ διαβάσω ἕως ὅτου ἐπιστρέψῃς).

14. *until*. (σύνδ.—πρόθ.). I did not go *until* he came. (Δὲν ἔφυγα, ἕως ὅτου ἦλθε).

15. *when*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.). How could she marry him *when* she knew he was a drunk? (Πῶς μπορούσε νὰ τὸν παντρεφῇ, ὅταν ᾔξερε πὼς ἦταν μεθύστακας;)

16. *whenever*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.). Come *whenever* you like. (Ἐλθε ὅποτεδῆποτε θέλετε).

17. *where*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.). That is *where* you are mistaken.

(Ἐκεῖ εἶναι πού πέφτετε ἔξω).

18. *while*. (σύνδ.—οὐσ.—ρῆμα). He had an accident *while* I was coming here. (Τοῦ συνέβη ἕνα ἀτύχημα ἐνῶ ἤρχόμουν ἐδῶ).

19. *why*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.) That is the reason *why* I hesitated. (Αὐτὸς εἶναι ὁ λόγος γιατί ἐδίσταζα).

20. *yet*. (σύνδ.—ἐπίρ.) He worked well, *yet* he failed. (Δούλεψε καλὰ, ἐντούτοις ἀπέτυχε).

Δ. Ὡς σύνδεσμοι χρησιμοποιοῦνται ἐπίσης καὶ μερικὲς φράσεις, τὶς κυριώτερες τῶν ὁποίων, μὲ ἀντίστοιχα παραδείγματα, δίδομεν κατωτέρω.

1. *according as*. You will be praised or blamed *according as* your work is good or bad. (Θὰ ἐπαινεθῇτε ἢ θὰ παρατηρηθῇτε ἀναλόγως μὲ τὴν καλὴν ἢ κακὴν ἐργασίαν σας).

2. *as if, as though*. He spoke *as if (as though)* he knew what he was talking about. (Μίλησε σὰν νὰ ᾔξερε περὶ τίνος ἐπρόκειτο).

3. *both... and*. It is *both* good *and* cheap. (Εἶναι ὄχι μόνο καλὸ, ἀλλὰ καὶ φτηνὸ).

4. *either... or*. He will come *either* today *or* tomorrow. (Θὰ ἔλθῃ σήμερον ἢ αὔριο).

5. *except that*. His suit is quite satisfactory, *except that* the sleeves are a little too long. (Τὸ κοστούμι του εἶναι τελείως ἱκανοποιητικὸ, μόνον πὺ τὰ μανίκια εἶναι λίγο μακρὰ).

6. *for want (lack) of*. I could not go abroad *for want (lack)* of money. (Δὲν μποροῦσα νὰ πάω στὸ ἐξωτερικὸ ἀπὸ ἔλλειψι χρημάτων).

7. *in case*. Stay here *in case* someone comes. (Μείνετε ἕδῳ μήπως τυχὸν ἔλθῃ κανεὶς)

8. *in order that*. I left *in order that* he could work undisturbed. ("Εφυγα γιὰ νὰ μπορέσῃ νὰ ἐργασθῇ ἀνενόχλητος).

9. *neither... nor*. Neither you *nor* he were there. (Οὔτε σεῖς, οὔτε ἐκεῖνος εἴσαστε ἐκεῖ).

10. *not only... but also*. He was *not only* clever *but also* very hardworking. ("Ητο ὄχι μόνον ἔξυπνος, ἀλλ' ἐπίσης πολὺ ἐργατικός).

11. *on condition that*. You can take it *on condition that* you return it tomorrow. (Μπορεῖτε νὰ τὸ πάρετε ἀρκεῖ νὰ τὸ ἐπιστρέψετε αὔριο).

12. *or else*. Hurry up *or else* you will be late. (Βιαστῆτε ἄλλως θ' ἀργήσετε).

13. *provided that*. "Εχει τὴν αὐτὴν σημασίαν τοῦ «*on condition that*».

14. *so as to*. We arranged matters *so as to* suit everybody. (Κανονίσσαμε τὰ πράγματα κατὰ τρόπον ὥστε νὰ βουλευθῇ ὁ καθένας).

II. INTERJECTION — ΕΠΙΦΩΝΗΜΑ

Τὸ ἐπιφώνημα χρησιμοποιεῖται, ὅταν πρόκειται νὰ ἐκφράσῃ κανεὶς ἓνα ξαφνικὸ αἰσθημα ἐκπλήξεως, θαυμασμοῦ, χαρᾶς κλπ. Τὸ ἐπιφώνημα δὲν παίρνει μέρος στὴ σύνθεσι τῶν προτάσεων.

Κυριώτερα ἐπιφωνήματα εἶναι τὰ ἑξῆς: *Oh!* (ὦ!), *Ah* (ἂ!), *Hurrah!* (Ζήτω!) *Alas!* (ἀλλοίμονο!), *well done!* (μπαράβο!) κλπ.

Π Ι Ν Α Ε

ΤΩΝ ΑΝΩΜΑΛΩΝ ΡΗΜΑΤΩΝ ΤΗΣ ΑΓΓΛΙΚΗΣ ΓΛΩΣΣΗΣ

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Tense</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
to arise	1 arose	arisen
to awake	1 awoke	awoke (ῆ) awaked
to be	1 was	been
to bear	1 bore	borne
to beat	1 beat	beaten
to become	1 became	become
to begin	1 began	begun
to bend	1 bent	bent
to beseech	1 besought	besought
to bid	1 bade (ῆ bid)	bidden (ῆ bid)
to bind	1 bound	bound
to bite	1 bit	bitten
to bleed	1 bled	bled
to blow	1 blew	blown
to break	1 broke	broken
to breed	1 bred	bred
to bring	1 brought	brought
to build	1 built	built
to burn	1 burnt	burnt
to burst	1 burst	burst
to buy	1 bought	bought
to cast	1 cast	cast
to catch	1 caught	caught
to choose	1 chose	chosen
to cling	1 clung	clung
to come	1 came	come
to cost	1 cost	cost
to creep	1 crept	crept
to cut	1 cut	cut
to deal	1 dealt	dealt
to dig	1 dug	dug
to do	1 did	done

Infinitive

Past Tense

Past Participle

to draw	1 drew	drawn
to dream	1 dreamt	dreamt
to drink	1 drank	drunk (ῆ) drunken)
to drive	1 drove	driven
to dwell	1 dwelt	dwelt
to eat	1 ate	eaten
to fall	1 fell	fallen
to feed	1 fed	fed
to feel	1 felt	felt
to fight	1 fought	fought
to find	1 found	found
to flee	1 fled	fled
to fling	1 flung	flung
to fly	1 flew	flown
to forbid	1 forbade	forbidden
to forget	1 forgot	forgotten
to forgive	1 forgave	forgiven
to forsake	1 forsook	forsaken
to forswear	1 forswore	forsworn
to freeze	1 froze	frozen
to get	1 got	got
to give	1 gave	given
to go	1 went	gone
to grind	1 ground	ground
to grow	1 grew	grown
to hang	1 hung (ῆ) hanged)	hung (ῆ) hanged)
to have	1 had	had
to hear	1 heard	heard
to hew	1 hewed	hewed (ῆ hewn)
to hide	1 hid	hidden
to hit	1 hit	hit
to hold	1 held	held
to hurt	1 hurt	hurt
to keep	1 kept	kept
to kneel	1 knelt	knelt
to know	1 knew	known
to lay	1 laid	laid
to lead	1 led	led
to lean	1 leant	leant

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Tense</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
to leap	1 leapt	leapt
to learn	1 learnt (ῆ learned)	learnt (ῆ learned)
to leave	1 left	left
to lend	1 lent	lent
to let	1 let	let
to lie	1 lay	lain
to light	1 lit ῆ lighted)	lit (ῆ lighted)
to lose	1 lost	lost
to make	1 made	made
to mean	1 meant	meant
to meet	1 met	met
to mistake	1 mistook	mistaken
to mow	1 mowed	mown
to outdo	1 outdid	outdone
to overcome	1 overcame	overcome
to overdo	1 overdid	overdone
to overdraw	1 overdrew	overdrawn
to overhear	1 overheard	overheard
to partake	1 partook	partaken
to pay	1 paid	paid
to put	1 put	put
to read	1 read	read
to rid	1 rid	rid
to ride	1 rode	ridden
to ring	1 rang	rung
to rise	1 rose	risen
to rot	1 rotted	rotted (ῆ rotten)
to run	1 ran	run
to saw	1 sawed	sawn
to say	1 said	said
to see	1 saw	seen
to seek	1 sought	sought
to sell	1 sold	sold
to send	1 sent	sent
to set	set	set
to sew	1 sewed	sewn
to shake	1 shook	shaken
to shave	1 shaved	shaved (ῆ shaven)

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Tense</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
to shear	1 sheared	sheared (ῥ shorn)
to shed	1 shed	shed
to shine	1 shone	shone
to shoe	1 shod	shod
to shoot	1 shot	shot
to show	1 showed	shown
to shrink	1 shrank	shrunk (ῥ shrunken)
to shut	1 shut	shut
to sing	1 sang	sung
to sink	1 sank	sunk (ῥ sunken)
to sit	1 sat	sat
to slay	1 slew	slain
to sleep	1 slept	slept
to slide	1 slid	slid
to sling	1 slung	slung
to slink	1 slunk	slunk
to slit	1 sht	slit
to smell	1 smelt	smelt
to sow	1 sowed	sown
to speak	1 spoke	spoken
to speed	1 sped	sped
to spell	1 spelt	spelt
to spend	1 spent	spent
to spill	1 spilt	spilt
to spin	1 spun	spun
to spit	1 spat	spat
to split	1 split	split
to spoil	1 spoilt (ῥ spoiled)	spoilt (ῥ spoiled)
to spread	1 spread	spread
to spring	1 sprang	sprung
to stand	1 stood	stood
to steal	1 stole	stolen
to stick	1 stuck	stuck
to sting	1 stung	stung
to stink	1 stank	stunk
to strew	1 strewed	strewn (ῥ strown)

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Past Tense</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
to stride	1 strode	stridden
to strike	1 struck	struck ῆ stricken)
to string	1 strung	strung
to strive	1 strove	striven
to swear	1 swore	sworn
to sweep	1 swept	swept
to swell	1 swelled	swelled (ῆ swollen)
to swim	1 swam	swum
to swing	1 swung	swung
to take	1 took	taken
to teach	1 taught	taught
to tear	1 tore	torn
to tell	1 told	told
to think	1 thought	thought
to thrive	1 throve (ῆ thrived)	thriven (ῆ thrived)
to throw	1 threw	thrown
to thrust	1 thrust	thrust
to tread	1 trod	trodden
to undergo	1 underwent	undergone
to underlie	1 underlay	underlain
to understand	1 understood	understood
to undertake	1 undertook	undertaken
to wake	1 woke	waked
to wear	1 wore	worn
to weave	1 wove	woven
to weep	1 wept	wept
to win	1 won	won
to wind	1 wound	wound
to withdraw	1 withdrew	withdrawn
to withhold	1 withheld	withheld
to withstand	1 withstood	withstood
to wring	1 wrung	wrung
to write	1 wrote	written

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑ ΧΙΥ

EXERCISES ON VOCABULARY

ΑΣΚΗΣΕΙΣ ΕΠΙ ΤΟΥ ΛΕΞΙΛΟΓΙΟΥ

Στὸ παρὸν Παράρτημα δίδομεν σειρὰν ἀσκήσεων ἐπὶ τοῦ ἀγγλικοῦ λεξιλογίου. Πρόκειται περὶ λίαν ἐνδιαφερουσῶν ἀσκήσεων, σκοπὸς τῶν ὁποίων εἶναι ὁ πλουτισμὸς τῶν γνώσεων τοῦ σπουδαστοῦ εἰς ὅ,τι ἀφορᾷ ὠρισμένα θέματα τῆς ἀγγλικῆς γλώσσης, ὅπως π.χ. εἶναι ἡ παραγωγὴ ἐπιθέτων ἐξ οὐσιαστικῶν, ἡ ἐκλογὴ οὐσιαστικῶν εἰς τὰ ὁποῖα εἶναι δυνατόν ν' ἀναφέρονται ὠρισμένα ἐπίθετα, ἡ ἀπόδοσις διὰ μιᾶς λέξεως ὠρισμένων ἐννοιῶν, ἡ χρῆσις ὠρισμένων λέξεων αἱ ὁποῖες ἔχουν περισσότερες τῆς μιᾶς σημασίας, ἡ χρῆσις λέξεων συντασσομένων μὲ δυὸ ἢ περισσότερες προθέσεις, ἡ ἀνεύρεσις συνωνύμων διδομένων λέξεων, κλπ, κλπ. Διὰ τὴν ἐπίλυσιν τῶν ἀσκήσεων αὐτῶν θὰ παραστῇ ἀνάγκη, ὅπως ὁ σπουδαστὴς κάμῃ εὐρεῖαν χρῆσιν Λεξικοῦ τὸ ὁποῖον ἔχει συνταχθῇ εἰς τὴν ἀγγλικὴν γλῶσσαν, ὅπως π.χ. εἶναι τὸ «*A Learner's dictionary of current English*», τὸ «*The Concise Oxford dictionary*» καὶ ἄλλα.

Τὴν ἐπίλυσιν τῶν ἀσκήσεων θὰ πρέπει νὰ ἐπιζητήσῃ ὁ σπουδαστὴς μόνος του, ἀνατρέχων, μετὰ τὴν σχετικὴν ἐργασίαν του καὶ διὰ τὸν ἔλεγχον τῆς ἀκριβείας αὐτῆς, εἰς τὸ τέλος τῆς Γραμματικῆς, ὅπου εἰς εἰδικὸν παράρτημα δίδεται τὸ Κλειδί τῶν κυριωτέρων ἀσκήσεων. Πάντως εἰς τὸ τέλος κάθε ἀσκήσεως, πρὸς καθοδήγησιν τοῦ σπουδαστοῦ, δίδομεν ἀνὰ ἓν παράδειγμα ἐπιλύσεως αὐτῆς.

Ἀσκήσεις Πρώτη

Give adjectives derived from the following nouns. (Νὰ δοθοῦν ἐπίθετα προερχόμενα ἐκ τῶν ἐπομένων οὐσιαστικῶν).

1. chaos. 2. decoration. 3. hospitality. 4. law. 5. penalty. 6. sport. 7. absorption. 8. beast. 9. caution. 10. decency. 11. effeminacy. 12. absurdity. 13. blasphemy. 14. defect. 15. disobedience. 16. epigram. 17. fever. 18. huff. 19. ideology. 20. rain. 21. region. 22. satire. 23. shadow. 24. temperament. 25. vinegar.

Παράδειγμα: *chaos*—adj (ἐπίθ): *chaotic*.

Ἀσκήσεις Δευτέρα

For each of the following words give a verb derived from the same root. (Γιὰ κάθε μία ἀπὸ τὶς ἐπόμενες λέξεις νὰ δοθῇ ἓνα ρῆμα προερχόμενον ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς ρίζης)

1. manager. 2. heart. 3. government. 4. oppression. 5. utility. 6. confusion. 7. example. 8. portrait. 9. tranquillity. 10. feint. 11. practical. 12. bathing. 13. absorption. 14. behaviour. 15. calumny. 16. centre. 17. damnation. 18. defamation. 19. edition. 20. embarkation. 21. familiarity. 22. abolition. 23. beauty. 24. captivity. 25. betrayal.

Παράδειγμα: *manager*—verb: *to manage*.

Ἀσκήσεις Τρίτη

Give a noun to which each of the following adjectives might suitably be applied. (Νὰ δοθῇ οὐσιαστικὸν σὺν ὁποῖον νὰ ταιριάζῃ καθένα ἀπὸ τὰ ἐπόμενα ἐπίθετα).

1. contiguous. 2. indispensable. 3. ingenious. 4. adequate. 5. extravagant. 6. exquisite. 7. current. 8. mordant. 9. chara-

cteristic. 10. contagious. 11. exhaustive. 12. arbitrary. 13. political. 14. memorable. 15. voracious. 16. commodious. 17. decent. 18. earnest. 19. circumstantial. 20. habitual. 21. icy. 22. garish. 23. lateral. 24. raw. 25. outward.

Παράδειγμα: *raw*.—*raw material*. (ἀκατέργαστον υλικόν).

Ἀσκήσις Τετάρτη.

Give verbs to express the meaning of the following phrases:

(Νὰ δοθοῦν ρήματα ἐκφράζοντα τὴν ἔννοια τῶν ἐπομένων φράσεων).

1. prove to be just. 2. illustrate by example. 3. speak ill of someone. 4. make larger. 5. find to be the same. 6. make peaceful. 7. become rotten. 8. supply with water. 9. become worse. 10. make worse. 11. move like a wave. 12. free from blame. 13. make necessary. 14. make speedier. 15. separate into parts. 16. make a thing appear more important. 17. work with numbers. 18. make false statements about someone. 19. honour a person by giving him a mark of distinction. 20. cut down expenses. 21. make false or incorrect. 22. to burn with a caustic substance in order to destroy infection. 23. to talk about a question giving reasons for and against. 24. to kill by electricity. 25. to attract or charm very greatly.

Παράδειγμα: *prove to be just*=*to justify*.

Ἀσκήσις Πέμπτη

Use each of the following words in two sentences so as to show that it has two different meanings. (Κάθε μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς ἐπόμενες λέξεις νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῇ σὲ δυὸ προτάσεις μὲ διαφορετικὴ σημασία σὲ κάθε πρότασι).

1. discharge. 2. exchange. 3. landing. 4. motion. 5. mount. 6. observe. 7. lapse. 8. overhaul. 9. apply. 10. audience. 11.

commission. 12. glare. 13. impression. 14. impervious. 15. impracticable. 16. negotiate. 17. ply. 18. move. 19. relation. 20. gather. 21. maintain. 22. shake. 23. drop. 24. live. 25. provide.

Παράδειγμα: *discharge*: α) The man *was discharged* (ἀπελύθη) for dishonesty. β) It took three days *to discharge* (νὰ ξεφορτώσωμε) the cargo.

Ἕκκησις Ἕκκησις

Use each of the following words in two sentences with different prepositions. (Κάθε μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς ἐπόμενες λέξεις νὰ χρησιμοποιηθῇ σὲ δυὸ προτάσεις μὲ διαφορετικὰς προθέσεις.)

1. prevail. 2. live. 3. provide. 4. decide. 5. cover. 6. distance. 7. indifferent. 8. keep. 9. play. 10. tear. 11. free. 12. lean. 13. melt. 14. settle. 15. hard. 16. fall. 17. catch. 18. stop. 19. shake. 20. drop. 21. sift. 22. offend. 23. part. 24. engage. 25. lie.

Παράδειγμα: *prevail* α) I prevailed *upon* him to help me. β) In the end our forces prevailed *over* those of our enemies.

Ἕβδομη Ἕβδομη

Give one or two synonyms for the following words with examples. (Νὰ δοθοῦν ἓνα ἢ δυὸ συνώνυμα τῶν ἐπομένων λέξεων μὲ παραδείγματα.)

1. ability. 2. aware. 3. defense. 4. bear. 5. commit. 6. drain. 7. error. 8. honest. 9. indisposed. 10. marvel. 11. abnormal. 12. accelerate. 13. dissimulation. 14. interrupt. 15. practise. 16. reduce. 17. shelter. 18. thankful. 19. conclude. 20 dull. 21. duty. 22. embark. 23. engage. 24. fade. 25. fast.

Παράδειγμα: *commit*—συν: α) *perpetrate*. The crime must have been *committed* (*perpetrated*) last night. β) *com promise*. As I had no wish *to commit* (*to compromise*) myself, I refused to make any statement.

Ἀσκησις Ὀγδόη

Replace each of the heavily printed expressions by a single word. Κάθε μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς ζωρὰ τυπωμένες φράσεις ν' ἀποδοθῇ διὰ μιᾶς λέξεως. (Δύνασθε ἐν ἀνάγκῃ νὰ μεταβάλετε τὴν σειρὰ τῶν λέξεων).

1. He was ashamed of being *unable to pay his debts*. 2. The garrison offered to surrender *on any terms*. 3. A problem *which could not be solved* confronted him. 4. *The person who brought the action* was awarded damages. 5. His defense depended on *the contention that he was elsewhere at the time in question*. 6. The driver was *completely freed from blame*. 7. The raiding force was *completely destroyed*. 8. The last question was *completely beside the point*. 9. In such films the rescuer always arrives *at the right moment*. 10. These regulations will be made *applicable to the past*. 11. They were *turned to stone* by fear. 12. Circumstances *prevented the achievement* of his ambition. 13. *Offices of profit but without duties* are rarely obtainable nowadays. 14. The guerrilla bands were exceedingly *apt to escape*. 15. He set a fine example of *love for his fellow men*. 16. What this land needs is *to be supplied with water*. 17. The second witness did not *confirm the truth* of his statement. 18. He envied creatures like the tortoise which *spend the winter in sleep*. 19. The two explosions occurred *at the same moment*. 20. Nelson showed a courage *which nothing could subdue*. 21. I do not think this sheme is *capable of being put into operation*. 22. *He made* this assertion *again and again*. 23. Your handwriting has steadily *become worse*. 24. His condition was *made worse* by exposure. 25. We felt a strong attraction *for each other*.

Παράδειγμα: He was ashamed of being *unable to pay his debts*=He was ashamed of being *insolvent*.

Ἀσκησις Ἑννάτη

Give one word for each of the following expressions. (Νὰ δοθῇ μιὰ λέξις γιὰ κάθε μιὰ ἀπὸ τὶς ἐπόμενες ἐκφράσεις)

1. a tendency to believe the worst about people. 2. a false and damaging statement made public in writing. 3. the story of a man's life written by himself. 4. a substance that prevents germs from spreading poison. 5. the absence of all government. 6. the process of recovering after an illness 7. being everywhere at the same time. 8. a person who is at home in many countries. 9. an exclusive trading right. 10. government by the will of the people. 11. the pretence of being virtuous. 12. the rise and fall of the voice in speaking. 13. settlement of a dispute by mutual concession. 14. heavy material placed in a ship to keep it steady. 15. study of the formation of words. 16. medicine that counteracts poison. 17. an obstruction that is quickly made across a road or street. 18. holding accepted opinions. 19. a piece of land in a forest from which trees have been removed. 20. a first appearance in society or in public. 21. a person who is filled with strong belief in and enthusiasm for something. 22. the spirit of a person appearing to the living. 23. the killing of one human being by another. 24. born of parents who were not married. 25. the habit of saying much in few words.

Παράδειγμα: a tendency to believe the worst about people=*suspicion*.

Ἀσκησις δεκάτη

ΣΗΜ: Ἡ παροῦσα ἀσκησις ἔχει σκοπὸν τὴν ἀνέυρεσιν ἰδιωματισμῶν ποὺ ἀποδίδουν μεταφορικῶς τὴν ἔννοιαν τῶν διδομένων προτάσεων, ἢ φράσεων.

Express the following ideas figuratively. (Αἱ ἐπόμενες ιδέες νὰ διατυπωθοῦν μεταφορικῶς).

1. I do not think you will do anything notable. 2. The rain fell very heavily. 3. He was a dismal and discouraging person. 4. He died in shame and misery. 5. He tried all possible methods. 6. What he says is always out of harmony with the conditions. 7. Every pleasant thing is accompanied by something unpleasant. 8. a person who never stays in one place for long. 9. speak plainly without hiding the truth by being too polite. 10. having to choose between two things both of which are bad. 11. remain neutral in a quarrel (not take sides). 12. be very intimate (or: work together). 13. gain two ends at once. 14. tell a secret without wishing to do so. 15. do or put things in the wrong order. 16. preside over a meeting. 17. a wide view of a town or area of country seen from above. 18. They are always quarreling. 19. I am too hopeful of my chances. (I am too optimistic). 20. I risk everything I have on a single venture. 21. I live in luxury. 22. I am just, even to one who does not deserve sympathy. 23. I join the winner when there is a quarrel. 24. I have higher aims or ambitions. 25. I spend money freely.

Παράδειγμα: The rain fell very heavily.—*It rained cats and dogs.*

KEY TO THE EXERCISES

ΤΟ ΚΛΕΙΔΙ ΤΩΝ ΑΣΚΗΣΕΩΝ

Ἐκ τῶν ἀσκήσεων τῶν Παραρτημάτων θὰ δώσωμεν τὸ κλειδί ἐκείνων ποῦ ἀφοροῦν τὴν χρῆσιν τῶν χρόνων τῶν ρημάτων, τῆς Ὑποτακτικῆς, Ἀπαρεμφάτου, Γερουνδίου, θέσεως τοῦ Ἐπιρρήματος, Προθέσεων καθὼς καὶ τοῦ εἰδικοῦ Παραρτήματος τῶν ἀσκήσεων ἐπὶ τοῦ Λεξιλογίου.

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ IV. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς χρήσεως τοῦ *Present Tense*.

A. 1. like. 2. comes-disturbs. 3. when are you leaving?. (when will you leave?). I am leaving (I shall leave). 4. buys-sells. 5. you meet. 6. we play. 7. speaks—I speak. 8. I see-is running. 9. is coming. 10. comes. 11. we go—we buy. 12. she is going. 13. does not speak. 14. I hear-is speaking. 15. advises. 16. does not like. 17. is working. 18. he takes. 19. read—they like. 20. do not go—they lunch. 21. does not like—she prefers. 22. live. 23. are you doing?—we are going. 24. find—they are waiting. 25. she is coming.

B. Δίδομεν μόνον τὴν ἀπόδοσιν τῶν ρημάτων τῶν προτάσεων σὲ *Simple* ἢ *Continuous Present Tense*.

1. till I come back... 2. I am coming back (ἤ: I shall come back). 3. we spend... 4. ... speaks... 5. ...is speaking... 6. where are you going... we are going 7. ...amuses me... she speaks... she does not understand. 8. ...drinks.. does not eat... 9. ...he

never disturbs... 10. ...comes... 11. ...he is studying... 12. ... understands... 13. Do you go . I go . 14. ...drink... prefer... 15. I don't see... she is working... 16. ...helps me... 17. Are you coming...? I am going to work... 18. ...comes... He is coming... 19. ...who lives... 20. ...eats... He also likes... he is drinking...

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ V. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς χρήσεως
τοῦ *Past Tense*.

A. 1. I was-I had not. 2. I saw-she was going. 3. I received. 4. lost-we could not. 5. entered-I was reading. 6. I sent-is living. 7. we went-we arrived-went up. 8. I saw-was looking. 9. happened. 10. went-was waiting. 11. I saw-was painting. 12. left-was-he had not-he hastened-he stopped-he saw-showed. 13. I entered-was reading and smoking-were talking. 14. I saw-was walking-I thought he was running. 15. repeated-he did not answer. 16. I quarrelled. 17. I saw-were opening. 18. measured. 19. they behaved. 20. I saw-jumped.

B. Δίδομεν μόνον τὴν ἀπόδοσιν τῶν ρημάτων
τῶν προτάσεων σὲ *Simple ἢ Continuous Past Tense*.

1. I studied. 2. ...I was going... I met... we talked... 3. It rained... 4. ...you phoned... I was working... 5. I was studying... came. 6. I received... he asked... 7. ...I arrived... was playing. 8. ...took place... was driving... 9. I met... was buying. 10. When I left... it was raining... I had to... 11. I forgot 12. ran . 13. came... I was leaving... 14... I went... I found... I knocked... answered. 15. He tried... he didn't manage. 16. I was having... when you phoned... I was a little late. 17. I met... 18... got on the bush... offered...

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ VI. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς χρήσεως
τοῦ *Present Perfect*.

A. 1. has been—he has not travelled. 2. he has gone. 3. She has never gone 4. has just left. 5. has decided 6. We live—we

have been living. 7. he has been working 8. has studied (ἤ: has been studying). 9. has been waiting 10. I have just seen. 11. He has been trying. 12. I have met. 13. he has given up. 14. He has never been. 15. he has been speaking (ἤ: he has spoken). 16. He has been smoking. 17. has just left. 18. has been playing. 19. it has not rained. 20. has been working (ἤ: has worked).

*B. Δίδομεν μόνον τὴν ἀπόδοσιν τῶν ρημάτων τῶν προτάσεων
οὕτως Simple ἢ Continuous Present Perfect.*

1. We have forgotten... 2. he has been studying... 3. I have read... 4. I have never been... has been living... 5. I have just finished... 6... has worked... 7. I have been waiting... 8... have taken place... 9. We have been living... 10. He has been studying... but he has not managed... 11... you have been working. 12. ... has just begun. 13. ... has been working... 14. I have read... 15. I have visited... 16. ... but he has not written yet. 17. I have just seen... 18. ... has been working... and they have not finished it yet. 19. ... have not managed... 20. ... has changed... 21. I I have been travelling... and I still haven't reached...

*ΠΑΡΑΤΗΡΗΜΑΤΟΣ VII. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς χρήσεως
τοῦ Past Perfect.*

A.-1. I went-he had made. 2. It was raining-I left-I had brought. 3. we had walked-we understood-we had taken. 4. I arrived-had began-had scored. 5. he arrived-I had not finished. 6. arrived- had broken through-had finished 7. came-had never believed. 8. caught-he had disposed. 9. I asked-he assured-he had searched-he couldn't. 10. I went-I had ordered-I found-he had made. 11. he had been speaking-was standing-interrupted. 12. I told-I went-he was getting on-I found-he had not dug up-had removed. 13. we did-we reached-had disappeared-had managed-had been carried away. 14. I read-I saw-had won. 15. I asked-he had done-I had lent-he refused.

B. 1. ... I met... he told... he knew... he had lived... 2. ... I arrived... I found... that I had left... 3. ... I returned... and counted... I saw... I had spent... 4. ... told me... he had decided... he had begun... 5. ... I asked... he was travelling... he said, he had... he replied... he avoided... 6. ... suffered... came... had run out... flourished... 7. ... came back... he had made... and told... he had seen... 8. ... I met... he told... he had enjoyed... and felt... 9. A telegram came... after you had left... 9. 10. I got home... told me... had played..., had got tired and gone to bed... 11. ... I visited... I wanted to become acquainted ... after I had been walking... I saw that I was back... 12. ... I had been working.

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ VIII. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς χρήσεως τῶν

α) *Future Perfect*, β) *Future in the Past* καὶ

γ) *Future Perfect in the Past*.

A. 1. you would have liked. 2. I should buy. 3. I shall have finished. 4. I should go. 5. I shall have been. 6. he will not have finished. 7. would have finished. 8. I shall visit (ἤ: I shall have visited). 9. you would be. 10. I should write. 11. I should give. 12. I shall see you again. 13. he would never have finished. 14. I should have lent. 15. I should go.

B. 1. ...we shall have been married.. 2. Would you have called on me... if it hadn't been raining? 3. Would you be scared... 4. What would you have done if you'd been... 5. I shall have finished.. 6. If ...had arrived... the patient might not have died. 7. You would not make... if... 8. The labourers would still be working... if it weren't raining. 9. If I hadn't seen it... I should never have believed it. 10. ...we will have visited... 11. If you had the chance, would you go... 12. I should wait for him, if I didn't have to leave... 13. Soon you will have forgotten... 14. I'd ring up the police, if I had... 16. ...wil have improved...

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ ΙΧ. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς χρήσεως
τῆς *Subjunctive*.

A. 1. If your son studied. 2. If... had studied. 3. If I had... 4. If I had had... 5. If... studied. 6. If... had studied. 7. If... called. 8. If... had called. 9. If I saw. 10. If I had seen.

B. 1. If... were... I would buy... 2. If ...had been... I would have bought... 3. ... he would do... if he realized... 4. ... he would have done... if he had realized... 5. If I found... I would give... 6. If I had found... I would have given... 7. If I turned out... we would be... 8. If I had turned... we would have been... 9. If I had... I would drive... 10. If I had had... I would have driven...

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ Χ. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τοῦ Ἀπαρεμφάτου
καὶ τοῦ Γερουνδίου.

A. 1. appear. 2. to be 3. acquaint. 4. taking. 5. to make. 6. get to sleep. 7. calling. 8. stealing. 9. dancing. 10. to stop smoking. 11. talking (ἦ; to talk). 12. do. 13. learning. 14. to behave and to act. 15. succeed-working. 16. coming. 17. listening. 18. talking. 19. receiving. 20. painting. 21. hitting. 22. taking. 23. smoking. 24. fall. 25. to trouble. 26. say. 27. reading. 28. finishing. 29. to speak. 30. to meet (ἦ; meeting).

B. 1. speaking to him. 2. being wrong. 3. having stolen. 4. After killing. 5. on my waiting. 6. for my being late. 7. to take. 8. having made. 9. having received. 10. having taken. 11. at his failing. 12. Your saying. 13. at winning. 14. having been. 15. Your buying. 16. taking.

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ ΧΙΙ. Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς θέσεως
τοῦ Ἐπιρρήματος.

A. 1. Have you *ever* visited... 2. He has *often* spoken... 3. There are *nearly*... 4. ...differs *greatly* from... 5. It *seldom*... 6. He looks *almost*... 7. What time do you *generally*... 8. I *still* have... 6. He is interested *only*... 10. ... was *badly* beaten... 11.

He *always* shuts... 12. Carry the eggs *carefully*... 13. I didn't *quite* catch... 14. I could *hardly* understand.

B. 1. He *never* fails .. 2. ... with his work *still* undone. 3. I *certainly* understood so. 4. Where do you *usually* spend. 5. There were *scarcely*... 6 We got home *late*... 7. They fought *bravely*... 8. was *pleasantly* situated... 9. ... stated his opinion *boldly*. 10. ... *plainly* told... 11. ... *entirely* different... 12 ... are *strongly* impressed... 13. ... you will *probably* catch cold. 14. I was *formerly*... he is clever *enough*... 15. If you look *carefully* you will *certainly* find... you *accidentally* left... 16. ...you are not behaving *properly*, ...you will *soon* be .. 17. They *almost* fell... 18. He works best... 19. ...we put *aside*... 20. ... was *nearly* annihilated...

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ VIII. Ὑσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῶν Προθέσεων.

A. 1. for. 2. of. 3. with. 4. in. 5. on. 6. on. 7. at-with. 8. in-in. 9. by. 10. at. 11. at. 12. with. 13. *at*. 14. about. 15. in.

B. 1. in. 2. to. 3. to-about. 4. on. 5. against. 6. in. 7. in. 8. to. 9. a) from. b) for. c) to. 10. at. 11. in. 12. by. 13. at. 14. on-under. 15. for-in.

C. 1. in. 2. to-to. 3. a) to. b) at-of. 4. to-in. 5. at-of. 6. of-to. 7. for-under-by. 8. to-with. 9. a) round. b) to. c) on. 10. a) over-in. b) with-at. 11. of-in-of. 12. to-of. 13. in-with-about. 14. a) in. b) at. c) by. 15. a) in. b) through.

ΠΑΡΑΡΤΗΜΑΤΟΣ XIV Ἀσκήσεων ἐπὶ τοῦ Λεξιλογίου)

ἝΑσκησις πρώτη. 1. chaotic. 2. decorative. 3. hospitable. 4. lawful. 5. penal. 6. sportive. 7. absorbent. 8. bestial. 9. cautious. 10. decent. 11. effeminate. 12. absurd. 13. blasphemous. 14. defective. 15. disobedient. 16. epigrammatic. 17. feverish. 18. huffy. 19. ideological. 20. rainy. 21. regional. 22. satirical. 23. shadowy. 24. temperamental. 25. vinegary.

"Ασκήσις δευτέρα. 1. to manage. 2. to hearten. 3. to govern. 4. to oppress. 5. to utilize. 6. to confuse. 7. to exemplify. 8. to portray. 9. to tranquillize. 10. to feint. 11. to practice. 12. to bathe. 13. to absorb. 14. to behave. 15. to calumniate. 16. to centre. 17. to damn. 18. to defame. 19. to edit. 20. to embark. 21. to familiarize. 22. to abolish. 23. to beautify. 24. to capture. 26. to betray.

"Ασκήσις τρίτη. 1. contiguous *houses*. 2. indispensable *assistance*. 3. ingenious *plan*. 4. adequate *supply*. 5. extravagant *tastes*. 6. exquisite *designs*. 7. current *affairs*. 8. mordant *criticism*. 9. characteristic *feature*. 10. contagious *disease*. 11. exhaustive *inquiry*. 12. arbitrary *arrangement*. 13. political *economy*. 14. memorable *occasion*. 15. voracious *animal*. 16. commodious *house*. 17. decent *fellow*. 18. earnest *worker*. 19. circumstantial *evidence*. 20. habitual *seat*. 21. icy *welcome*. 22. garish *ornament*. 23. lateral *buds*. 24. raw *material*. 25. outward appearance.

"Ασκήσις τετάρτη. 1. to justify. 2. to exemplify. 3. to vilify. 4. to magnify. 5. to identify. 6. to pacify. 7. to putrefy. 8. to irrigate. 9. to deteriorate. 10. to aggravate. 11. to undulate. 12. to exonerate. 13. to necessitate. 14. to accelerate. 15. to segregate. 16. to accentuate. 17. to calculate. 18. to calumniate. 19. to decorate. 20. to economize. 21. to falsify. 22. to cauterize. 23. to debate. 24. to electrocute. 25. to fascinate.

"Ασκήσις πέμπτη. 1. a) The man *was discharged* for dishonesty. b) It took three days *to discharge* the cargo.

2. a) We met at his house *to exchange* opinions. b) I told him *to exchange* the book he had bought.

3. a) *The landing* of the troops was carried out successfully. b) Luckily, when he fell out of the car, *he landed* on his hands and feet.

4. a) He made no *motion* to help me. b) He *motioned* to me to remain silent.

5. a) I bought a bracelet of diamonds *mounted* in platinum.
b) He ordered his men *to mount* and they set off in pursuit.

6. a) No change in his condition *has been observed*. b)
Strict silence must *be observed* at all times.

7. a) *He lapsed* into silence when permission was refused.
b) after *a lapse* of about 10 minutes.

8. a) The car was left in the garage for *overhaul*. b)
Though he left about 10 minutes earlier *I soon overhauled* him.

9. a) When the school needed a new teacher, six men *applied* for the position. b) What I am saying *does not apply* to you.

10. a) There is a large *audience* at the theatre. b) The king granted him an *audience*.

11. a) I work on a *5000 commission*. b) *A comission* was sent to England.

12. a) The tropic sun *glared down* on us all day b) *He glared* at me like a bull at a red rag.

13. a) A first *impression* of 5000 copies has been made. b)
It's my *impression* that he's unwilling to come.

14. a) They were completely *impervious* to all our appeals. b) These boots are *impervious* to water.

15. a) His plan is completely *impracticable*. b) They are unfortunately an *impracticable* people.

16. a) It is extremely difficult to *negotiate* the tortuous bends. b) Various unsuccessful attempts were made *to negotiate* for more favourable terms of surrender.

17. a) His ship *plies* between the various islands. b) *He plied* both whip and spurs mercilessly.

18. a) All our pleas failed *to move* him. b) The victims *were moved* to places of safety.

19. a) What *relation* has he to you? b) I have business *relations* with him.

20. a) The clouds *are gathering*. b) From what we saw we gathered that he had left the room in a great hurry.

21. a) *I maintain* a large family. b) *I maintain* that he is a thief.

22. a) *I shake* a carpet. b) *He was* much *shaken* by his friend's death.

23. a) I am ready *to drop* with fatigue. b) *I drop* a letter in the letter-box.

24. a) I cannot *live* through the winter. b) Where *do you live*?

25. a) We must *provide* against an attack. b) *He provides* us with vegetables.

***Ἀσκησις ἐκπη.** 1. a) I prevailed *upon* him to help me. b) Our forces prevailed *over* those of our enemy.

2. a) I live *on* a salary. b) I live *with* someone.

3. a) We cannot provide you *with* the supplies necessary. b) It's difficult to provide *for* so many people.

4. a) I decided *against* asking him to come. b) We shall decide *on* the matter tomorrow.

5. a) He came back covered *with* glory. b) He tried to cover his confusion *under* a smile.

6. a) I live at a distance *from* the town. b) the distance *between* the two houses.

7. a) I am indifferent *to* danger. b) I remain indifferent *in* a dispute.

8. a) I keep someone *from* falling. b) He was kept *in* prison for years.

9. a) I play *for* money. b) I play *on* the piano.

10. a) His heart was torn *with* remorse. b) He tore the book *out of* my hands.

11. a) I am too free *in* my behaviour. b) I am free *with* my money.

12. a) I lean *on* my elbows. b) I lean *over* an armchair.

13. a) I melt *into* tears. b) Butter melts *on* a hot plate.

14. a) He settled *in* the south of the island. b) Things will soon settle *into* order.

15. a) Don't be hard *upon* him. b) I am hard *of* hearing.

16. a) The big tree fell *with* a crash. b) I fall *at* someone's knees.

17. a) I caught him *by* the arm. d) He was caught *in* the act.

18. a) I stop someone *from* speaking. b) I stop *for* someone.

19. a) I shake hands *with* someone. b) He shook his fist *in* my face.

20. a) I am ready to drop *with* fatigue. b) I drop a letter *in* the letter-box.

21. a) I sift out ashes *from* the cinders. b) I sift sugar *on* to a cake.

22. a) He was offended *at* my words. b) I offend *against* the law.

23. a) I part my hair *in* the middle. b) I part company *with* someone.

24. a) I am engaged *in* writing a letter. b) She is engaged *to* my son.

25. The difficulty lies *in* this. b) I lie *at* the mercy of someone.

Ἕσκησις ἐβδόμη. 1. *ability*.—συν: *efficiency*. Παραδ: Unless you show more *ability* (*efficiency*) you will never succeed in your work.

2. *aware*.—συν: a) *conscious*. b) *informed*. Παραδ: a) Are you *aware* (*conscious*) that you are sitting on my hat? b) He was not at all *aware* (*informed*) of the facts.

3. *defence*.—συν: a) *protection*. q) *plea*. Παραδ: a) a *defence* (*protection*) against enemies. b) The accused man's *defence* (*plea*) was that...

4. *bear*.—συν: a) *to endure*. b) *to give*, ἢ *to produce* Παραδ: a) The explorers *bore* (*endured*) the hardships without complaint. b) These trees *bear* (*give*, *produce*) a lot of fruit.

5. *to commit*. (Ἐδόθησαν παραδείγματα).

6. *drain*.—συν: a) *to empty*. b) *to dwindle*. Παραδ: a) We'll have to *drain* (*empty*) the petrol tank. b) His strength gradually *drained* (*dwindled*) away.

7. *error*.—συν: *mistake*. Παραδ: If he makes an *error* (*mistake*), he is the first to admit it.

8. *honest*.—συν: a) *fair, honourable*. b) *frank, straightforward*. Παραδ: a) He is very *honest* (*fair, honourable*) in his dealings. b) All I want is your own *honest* (*frank, straightforward*) opinion.

9. *indisposed*.—συν: a) *unwell*. b) *unwilling, reluctant*. Παραδ: a) My father is *indisposed* (*unwell*). b) He is *indisposed* (*unwilling, reluctant*) to help me.

10. *marvel*.—συν: a) *miracle*. b) *prodigy*. Παραδ: a) How he caught the ball is a *marvel* (*miracle*). b) Mozart must have been a *marvel* (*prodigy*).

11. *abnormal*.—συν: a) *deformed*. b) *unusual*. Παραδ: a) a baby born *abnormal* (*deformed*). b) *abnormal* (*unusual*) weather conditions.

12. *accelerate*.—συν: *to speed up*. Παραδ: Step have been made *to accelerate* (*speed up*) construction.

13. *dissimulation*.—συν: *pretence*. Παραδ: His *dissimulation* (*pretence*) of disinterest almost convinced me.

14. *interrupt*.—συν: a) *to suspend*. b) *to disturb*. Παραδ: a) Our work has been temporarily *interrupted* (*suspended*). b) I dislike being *interrupted* (*disturbed*) when I am studying.

15. *practice*.—συν: a) *training*. b) *custom*. Παραδ: a) He will require little more *practice* (*training*) before undertaking the task. b) It is still a *practice* (*custom*) in some countries for girls to be sold as slaves.

16. *reduce*.—συν: *to decrease*. b) *to subject*. Παραδ: a) Wages must be *reduced* (*decreased*) in order to meet out expenses. b) The people were gradually *reduced* (*subjected*) to a state of slavery.

17. *shelter*.—συν: a) *protection*. b) *refuse*. Παραδ: a) The soldiers crouched behind the rocks for *shelter* (*protection*). b) The Celts found *shelter* (*refuge*) among the mountains of Wals.

18. *thankful*.—συν: a) *glad, pleased*. b) *grateful*. Παραδ: a) I am *thankful* (*glad, pleased*) that your recovery is now complete. b) He is never *thankful* (*grateful*) no matter what you do to help him.

19. *conclude*.—συν: a) *to arrange*. d) *to gather, to end*.

Παραδ: a) Germany and Italy *had concluded* (arranged) a mutual aid pact. b) He *concluded* (gathered, ended) by thanking all his colleagues.

20. *dull*.—συν: a) *uninteresting*. b) *cloudy*. Παραδ: a) This book is extremely *dull* (uninteresting). b) It's extremely *dull* (cloudy) weather today.

21. *duty*.—συν: a) *customs tax*. b) *responsibility*. Παραδ: No *duty* (customs tax) is charged on personal effects. b) This man has no sense of *duty* (responsibility).

22. *embark*.—συν: a) *to set off*. b) *to board a ship*. Παραδ: a) Scott and his companions *embarked* (set off) upon their great adventure with enthusiasm. b) The troops *embarked* (boarded ships) for Africa.

23. *engage*.—συν: a) *to involve*. b) *to employ*. Παραδ: a) Our troops were *engaged* (involved) in heavy fighting. b) He refused to *engage* (employ) me.

24. *fade*.—συν: a) *die*. b) *disappear*. Παραδ: a) The sound of their voices *faded* (died) away. b) The plane gradually *faded* (disappeared) into the distance.

25. *fast*.—συν: a) *firm*. b) *quickly*. Παραδ: a) He ordered his troops to stand *fast* (firm). b) His car can travel very *fast* (quickly).

*Ασκησις όγδόη. 1. *insolved*. 2. *unconditionally*. 3. an *idssolvable* problem. 4. the *plaintiff*. 5. depended on an *alibi*. 6. *was exonerated*. 7. *was annihilated*. 8. *was completely irrelevant*. 9. *oportunely*. 10. *retrospective*. 11. They were *petrified*. 12. *frustrated*. 13. *sinecures*. 14. *elusive*. 15. of *philanthropy*. 16. *irrigation*. 17. did not *corroborate*. 18. which *hibernate*. 19. *simultaneously*. 20. an *indomitable* courage. 21. *practicable*. 22 *He repeated*. 23. *has deteriorated*. 24. *was aggravated*. 25. a strong *mutual* attraction.

*Ασκησις έννάτη. 1. *suspicion*. 2. *libel*. 3. *autobiography*. 4. *antiseptic*. 5. *anarchy*. 6. *convalescence*. 7. *omnipresence*. 8. *cosmopolitan*. 9. *monopoly*. 10. *democracy*. 11. *hypocrisy*.

12. cadence, 13. agreement, 14. ballast 15. etymology, 16. antidote, 17. barricade, 18. conventionality, 19. clearing, 20. debut, 21. fanatic, 22. ghost, 23. homicide, 24. illegitimate, 25. laconism.

Ἀσκησις δεκάτη. 1. I don't think you will set the Thames in fire. 2. ἐδόθη. 3. He was a wet blanket. 4. He died a dog's death. 5. He moved heaven and earth. 6. He always strikes a false note. 7. No rose without a thorn. 8. a bird of passage. 9. call a spade a spade. 10. between the devil and the deep sea. 11. sit on the fence. 12. be hand in glove. 13. kill two birds with one stone. 14. let the cat out of the bag. 15. put the car before the horse. 16. take the chair. 17. a bird's eye view. 18. They lead a cat and dog life. 19. I count my chickens before they are hatched. 20. I put my eggs in one basket. 21. I live on the fat of the land. 22. I give the devil his due. I come down on the right side of the fence. 24. I fly at higher game, 25. I dip my hand into my purse.

ΠΙΝΑΞ ΠΕΡΙΕΧΟΜΕΝΩΝ

	Σελ.
Π ρ ο λ ο γ ο ς	3
Τὰ μέρη τοῦ Λόγου	5
Κεφάλαιον Πρῶτον	7
	7
	11
Παράρτ. I	13
Κεφάλαιον Δεύτερον.	15
Κεφάλαιον Τρίτον.	23
Παράρτ. II	34
Κεφάλαιον Τέταρτον.	37
Παράρτ. III	48
Κεφάλ. Πέμπτον.	51
	53
	53
	53
	53
	63
Παράρτ. IV	67
	69
	69
	77
Παράρτ. V	80
	82
	82
	86
Παράρτ. VI	89
	91
	91
	95
Παράρτ. VII	97
	99
	99
	102
	106

	Σχηματισμός καὶ Κλίσις	106
	Χρήσις τοῦ Future Perfect	109
	<i>Z. Future in the Past</i>	112
	Σχηματισμός καὶ κλίσις	112
	Χρήσις τοῦ Future in the Past	115
	<i>II. Future Perfect in the Past</i>	118
	Σχηματισμός καὶ κλίσις	118
	Χρήσις τοῦ F. P. in the Past	122
Παράρτ. VIII	Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς χρήσεως τῶν: α) Future Tense, β) F. in the Past γ) F. P. in the Past	124
	<i>II Subjunctive—Ὑποτακτικὴ</i>	126
Παράρτ. IX	Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς Subjunctive	133
	<i>III. Imperative—Προστακτικὴ</i>	134
	<i>IV. Infinitive—Ἀπαρέμφατον</i>	136
	<i>V. Participle—Μετοχὴ</i>	146
	<i>VI. Gerund—Γερουνδιον</i>	156
Παράρτ. X	Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τοῦ Ἀπαρεμ- φάτου καὶ τοῦ Γερουνδίου	157
	<i>Passive Voice—Παθητ. Φωνή</i>	159
Παράρτ. XI	Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῆς Παθητ. Φωνῆς	166
Κεφάλαιον. Ἑκτον	<i>Adverb—Ἐπίρρημα</i>	167
Παράρτ. XII	Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τοῦ Ἐπιρρήματος	179
Κεφάλαιον Ἑβδομον	<i>Preposition—Πρόθεσις</i>	181
Παράρτ. XIII	Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τῶν προθέσεων	193
Κεφάλαιον Ὀγδοον.	<i>Conjunction—Σύνδεσμος</i>	195
	<i>Interjection—Ἐπιφώνημα</i>	199
	Πίναξ τῶν ἀνωμάτων ρημάτων	200
Παράρτ. XIV	Ἀσκήσεις ἐπὶ τοῦ Λεξιλογίου	205

ΤΥΠΟΓΡΑΦΙΚΑ ΛΑΘΗ ΠΡΟΣ ΔΙΟΡΘΩΣΙΝ

Σελίς	Σειρά	ἀντι	νά διορθωθῇ
5	24	in Monday	on Monday ✓
7	21	Giblaltar	Gibraltar
8	5	Olymbus	Olympus
13	4	ν' ἀφαιρεθοῦν αἱ λέξεις «τῶν προτάσεων»	
14	8	allucinations	hallucinations
16	9	ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΝΟΣ	ΣΧΗΜΑΤΙΣΜΟΣ
18	17	brethern	brethren
24	24	defightful	delightful
27	8	ἀμφιβάλω	ἀμφιβάλλω
27	24	δουλειά	δουλειά
33	7	Show's	Shaw's
34	11	jolly	folly
40	12	ous	our
40	21	'Αζ	'Εξ
43	1	ἀναφέ	ἀναφέρεται
43	14	yourslves	yourselves
43	15	fhemselfes	themselves
52	20	βά	θά
53	28	to work	to work
55	29	ὄχι	οὐχι
60	30	de	he
63	19	Γῆν	Τῆν
70	8	fo	to
83	21	heve	have
83	22	heve	have
84	10	wrirten	written
84	11	wor»ed	worked
85	11	coing	going
87	4	Tense	Tense
87	7	he	she
97	1	Vl	Vll
103	24	χσῆσις	χρησις
104	1	ταῦ	τοῦ

Σελίς	Σειρά	ἀντί	νὰ διορθωθῇ
104	12	reward	a reward
106	14	wil	will
115	τελευταία	ὅποια	ὅποια
118	15	να συμπληρωβῇ	Plural
123	12	Conditional Perfect	Condicional
124	10	VII	VIII
127	10	Paste	Past
129	8	Paste	Past
131	15	he he	he
132	1	VIII	IX
138	20	μετὰ τὸ I, νὰ προστεθῇ	τὸ)
140	26	τότε	τότε
145	7	know	know
145	11	They	They
146	27	Pas tense	Past Tense
149	10	δ)	—
157	1	IX	X
157	10	acknowledged	acknowledged
161	17	TFNSE	TENSE
165	30	πρότασες	πρότασις
166	1	X	XI
167	7	manner	manner
179	1	X	XII
179	τελευταία	jight	fight
183	10	dit	did
184	13	towrads	towards
187	21	hvae	have
187	25	τριγυρνῶ	τριγυρνῶ
189	19	ἤλθαμε	ἤλθαμε
191	τελευταία	φορᾶ	ἀφορᾶ
193	τελευταία	Don'	Don't
224	16	oj	of

W.C.R.

ΑΓΓΛ

ΓΡΑΜΜ